The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.

http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924064948908
THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE COMPLETE WORKS
OF
THOMAS NASHE.

VOL. II.

PIERCe PENILESSE HIS SVPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Astrologicall Prognostication.

ii. Strange Newes of the Intercepting certaine Letters,

1592.
When Saul receiv'd no answer down from heav'n,
How quickly was his jealous passion driven
A desp'rate course! He needs must cure the itch
Of his extreme defiers, by a Witch:
When we have lost our way to God, how levell,
How easie to be found 's the way to the Devil.

The South Library
OR
ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN
Unique or Very Rare
BOOKS
IN
VERSE AND PROSE
LARGELY
From the Library of

Henry Bath Esqr.
(Drawn in 1652 after a Portrait.)

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc.
BY THE
Rev. Alexander B. Gurney, LL.D. F.S.A.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY
The Huth Library.

THE

COMPLETE WORKS

OF

THOMAS NASHE.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVFPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

i. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION.

ii. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS.

1592.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1883—84.

50 Copies.

\[\text{\textcopyright 1883-84}\]
CONTENTS.

PAGE

Pierce Penilesse his Application to the Diuell 1

Harvey-Greene Tractates—

1. A wonderfull strange and miraculous astrologickal prognostication . 139

2. Strange newes of the intercepting certaine letters . . . . . 171
Late tyr'd with wo, even ready for to pine
With rage of love, I call'd my Love vnhind;
She in whose eyes love, though vnfelt, doth shine,
Sweet said, that I true love in her should find.
I joy'd; but straight thus watred was my wine:
That love she did, but loved a love not blind;
Which would not let me, whom shee loued, decline
From nobler course, fit for my birth and mind.
And therfore, by her love's authority,
Wild me these tempests of vaine love to flie,
And anchor fast my self on Vertue's shore.
Alas, if this the only mettall be
Of love new-coind to help my beggery,
Deere, love me not, that you may love me more.

Sir Philip Sidney: 'Astrophell and Stella,' xii.
V.

PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

1592.
NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'Pierce Penileffe' of 1592 as sanctioned by its Author, I am again indebted to the Huth Library. The semi-surreptitious one issued earlier in the same year by a different publisher—Richard Jhones, against whom good Nicholas Breton made complaint for his sharp practice in assigning to popular names productions that were not really theirs—was reprinted by Mr. J. Payne Collier, most perfunctorily and carelessly, for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1 vol., 1843). The title-page—showing the 'long taile' which Nash demands shall be suppressed—is given on our verso of that of 1592 prepared by him in substitution, together with Jhones's short Epistle. As an Appendix-Note to 'Pierce Penileffe,' I add at the close of our reproduction, such 'faults' of the Jhones edition as seem to call for record, albeit I suspect some at least belong to Mr. Collier himself, rather than to his (unique) exemplar. Be this as it may, our text corrects many irritating misprints, and gives better readings in several important places. It is a small 4to, 16 leaves, unpaged, and folios (i.e. on one side, from 17 to 40, 2—L. iii.). See our 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical,' in Vol. IV., for notices of this singular book, including a contemporary French translation; also 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical,' in Vol. I.—A. B. G.
Pierce Penileffe

HIS SUPPLICATION
to the Diuell.

Barbara grandis habere nihil.

Written by Tho. Nash, Gent.

LONDON,
Printed by Abell Ieffes, for
John Bubie, 1592.
PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO
THE DEUILL.

Describing the ouer-spreading of Vice, and
the suppression of Vertue.

Pleasantly interlac’d with variable delights: and
pathetically intermixt with conceived
reproofes.

Written by Thomas Nash, Gentleman.

LONDON,
Imprinted by Richard Ihones, dwelling at the
Signe of the Rose and Crowne, nere
Holburne Bridge.
1592.

The Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen,

In the Author’s absence, I haue been bold to publilh this pleasaunt
and wittie discourse of Pierce Penileffe, his Supplication to the Divell:
which title, though it may seeme strange and in it selfe somewhat
preposterous, yet if you vouchsafe the reading, you shall finde reason,
as well for the Author’s vncoy nomination, as for his vnwoanted
beginning without epistle, proeme, or dedication: al which he hath
inferred conceitedly in the matter; but Ife be no blab to tell you in
what place. Befowe the looking, and I doubt not but you shall finde
dedication, epistle, and proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection,

R. I.
A private Epistle of the Author to the Printer.

Wherein his full meaning and purpose (in publishing this Booke) is set foorth.

For I am verie forrie (Sir) I am thus vn-awares betrayed to infamie. You write to me my booke is hafting to the second impression: he that hath once broke the Ice of impudence, neede not care how deepe he Wade in discredite. I confesse it to be a meere toy, not deferving any judicial mans view: If it haue found any friends, so it is, you know very well that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it, and vncorrected and vnfinishe it hath offered it selfe to the oppen scorne of the world. Had you not beene so froward in the republishing of it, you shoulde haue had certayne Epiftles to Orators and Poets, to insert to the later end; As namely, to the Ghost of Machewill, of Tully, of Ouid, of Roscius, of Pace the Duke of Norfolks Iefter: and lastly, to the Ghost of Robert Greene,
telling him, what a coyle there is with pamphleting on him after his death. These were prepared for Pierce Penileffe first setting forth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my Lord in the Countrey.

Now this is that I would haue you to do in this second edition; First, cut off that long-tayld Title,* and let mee not in the forefront of my Booke, make a tedious Mouthebanks Oration to the Reader, when in the whole there is nothing praiseworthy.

I heare fay there be obscure imitators, that goe about to frame a second part to it, and offer it to fell in Paules Church-yard, and elsewhere, as from me. Let me request you, (as ever you wil expect any fauour at my hands) to get some body to write an Epistle before it, ere you set it to sale againe, importing thus much; that if any such lewd deuife intrude it selfe to their handes, it is a cozenage and plaine knauery of him that fels it to get mony, and that I haue no manner of interest or acquaintance with it. Indeed if my leysure were such as I could wysh, I might 'haps (halfe a yeare hence) write the retourne of the Knight of the Poft from Hell, with the Deuils anfwer to the Supplication: but as for a second

* See it on verso of Nash's own title-page, p. 4.—G.
part of Pierce Penileffe, it is a most ridiculous rogery.*

Other newes I am aduertized of, that a scald truiall lying Pamphlet, called Greens groat-worth of wit is giuen out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my soule, but utterly renounce me, if the leaft word or syllable in it proceeded from my penne, or if I were any way priuie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to see into the vanitie of the worlde more than euer I did, and now I condemne my selfe for nothing fo much, as playing the dolt in Print. Out vpon it, it is odious, especially, in this moralizing age, wherein euer one feekes to shew himſelfe a Polititian by mis-interpreting.

In one place of my Booke, Pierce Penileffe faith but to the Knight of the Poſt, I pray how might I call you, and they say, I meant one Howe, a Knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before.

The Antiquaries are offended without cause, thinking I goe about to detraeft from that excellent profeffion, when (God is my witnesſe) I reuerence it as much as any of them all, and had no manner of allusion to them that stumble at it. I hope they wil giue me leaue to think there be fooles of that Art as well as of all other; but to faye, I utterly

* See on this in our Memorial-Introduction prefixed to Vol. I.; also ibid., Critical, in Vol. IV.—G.
condemne it as an vnfruitfull studie, or seeme to despise the excellent quallified partes of it, is a most false and injurious surmise. There is nothing that if a man lift he may not wrest or peruer, I cannot forbid anie to thinke villainously, *Sed caueat emptor*, Let the interpreter beware: for none euer heard mee make Allegories of an idle text. Write who wil against me, but let him look his life be without scandale: for if he touch me neuer so litlle, Ie be as good as the Blacke Booke to him and his kindred.

Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can inuent: who spurneth not at a dead dogge: but I am of another metall, they shall knowe that I liue as their euill Angell, to haunt them world without end, if they disquiet me without cause. Farewell, and let me heare from you as soone as it is come foorth. I am the Plagues prifoner in the Country as yet: if the sicknesse cease before the thirde impreffion, I will come and alter whatsoeuer may be offensiue to any man, and bring you the latter ende.

Pierce Penileffe his Supplication
to the Diuell.

HAVING spent manie yeeres in studying
how to liue, and liuue a long time
without mony: hauing tilled my youth
with follie, and surfetted my minde with vanitie, I
began at length to looke backe to repentaunce,
& addresse my endeuors to prosperitie: But all in
vaine, I fate vp late, and rose earely, contended
with the colde, and conuerfed with scarcitie: for
all my labours turned to loffe, my vulgar Muse
was despifed and neglected, my paines not regarded,
or slighdy rewarded, and I my selfe (in prime of
my best wit) laid open to pouertie.

Whereupon (in a malecontent humor)
I accused my fortune, raid on my
patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers,
& ragde in all points like a mad man.
In which agony tormenting my selfe a long time,
I grew by degrees to a milder discontent: and
pausing a while ouer my standish, I resolued in
verse to paynt forth my passion: which, best
agreeing with the vaine of my vnrest, I began to complaine in this fort.

Why ists damnation to dispaire and dye,  
When life is my true happinesse disease?  
My soule, my soule, thy safetie makes me flie  
The faultie meanes, that might my paine appease.  
Diuines and dying men may talke of hell,  
But in my heart, her feuerall torments dwell:

Ah worthlesse Wit, to traine me to this woe,  
Deceitfull Artes, that nourish Discontent:
Ill thriue the Follie that bewitcht me so:  
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent.

And yet my wantes perfwade me to proceede,  
Since none takes pitie of a Scholler's neede.

Forgiue me, God, although I curse my birth,  
And ban the aire, wherein I breathe a Wretch:  
Since Miserie hath daunted all my mirth,  
And I am quite vndone through promife-breach.

Oh frends, no frends, that then vngently frowne,  
When changing Fortune cafts vs head-long downe.
Without redresse complaynes my carelesse verse,  
And Mydas-eares relent not at my moane:  
In some farre Land will I my griefes rehearse,  
Mongst them that will be mou’d when I shall groane.  
England (adieu) the Soyle that brought me foorth,  
Adieu vnkinde, where skill is nothing woorth.  

These Rymes thus abruptly set downe, I tost my imagination a thousand waies, to see if I could finde any meanes to relieve my estate: But all my thoughts conforted to this conclusion, that the world was vncharitable, & I ordained to be *miserable. Thereby I grew to consider how many base men that wanted those partes which I had, enjoyed content at will, & had wealth at commaund: I calde to minde a Cobler, that was worth fiue hundred pound, an Hoftler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispende forty pounds yerely by his Land, a Carre-man in a leather pilche, that had whipt out a thousand pound out of his horse taile: and haue I more witte than all these (thought I to my selfe)? am I better borne? am I better brought vp? yea, and better fauored? and yet am I a begger? What is the cause? how am I crost, or whence is this curfe?
Euen from hence, that men that should employ such as I am, are enamoured of their own wits, and think whatever they do is excellent, though it be never so future: that Learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of the ink and paper: and a Scruuener better paid for an obligation, than a Scholler for the best Poeme he can make; that *euerie grosse brainde Idiot is suffered to come into print, who if hee let foorth a Pamphlet of the praiſe of Pudding-pricks, or write a Treatife of Tom Thumme, or ſy exploitſ of Vntruffe; it is bought vp thicke & three-folde, when better things lie dead. How then can we chufe but be needy, when ther are fo many droans amongſt vs? or euer proue rich, ſy toyle a whole yeare for fair looks?

Gentle Sir Philip Sidney, thou knewst what belongd to a Scholler, thou kneweſt what paines, what toile, what trauell, conduct to perfection: wel couldſt thou giue euery Vertue his encouragement, euery Art his due, euery writer his desert: cause none more vertuous, witty, or learned than thy selfe.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and haft left too few succéffors of thy glory, too few to cheriſh the Sonn of the Mufes, or water those budding hopes with their plentie, which thy bountie erſt planted.
PIERCE PENILESSE.

Beleeue me, Gentlemen, for some crosse mis-happes, haue taught me experience, there is not that strickt obseruation of honour, which hath bene here- tofore. Men of great calling take it of merite, to haue their names eternizde by Poets; and whatsoeuer pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they put it vp their fleueues, and scarce giue him thankes that presents it. Much better is it for those golden Pens to raise such vngratefull Peafants from the Dung-hill of obscuritie, and make them equal in fame to the Worthies of olde, when their doting selfe-loue shall challenge it of dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themselfes, but impoverish liberalitie in others.

This is the lamentable condition of our Times, that men of Arte must seeke almes of Cormorants, & those that deserue best, be kept vnder by Dunces, who count it a policie to keep them bare, because they shoulde follow their bookes the better: thinking belike, that, as preferment hath made them- selues idle, that were earst painfull in meaner places, so it wold likewise slacken the endeuours of those Students, that as yet strive to excell in hope of aduancement. A good policie to suppress superfluous liberalitie. But, had it beene practiséd when they were promoted, the Yeomandry of the Realme had been better to passe than it is, and one Droane
should not have driven so many Bees from their honey-combs.

I, I, weele giue loosers leaue to talke: it is no matter what *Sic probo* and his pennileffe companions prate, whilst we haue the gold in our coffers: this is it that will make a knaue an honest man, & my neighbour *Cramptons* stripling a better Gentleman than his Grand fier. O it is a trim thing when Pride, the sonne, goes before, & Shame, the father, followes after. Such presidents there are in our Cömon-wealth a great many; not so much of them whome learning & Industrie hath exalted, (whome I prefer before *Genus et praæuos*) as of Carterly vpstarts, that out-face Towne & Countrey in their veluets, [when Sir Rowland Ruffet-coat, their dad, goes *fagging* every day in his round gascoynes of white cotton, & hath much a do (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrift elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happy are they, say I, that haue such fathers to worke for them, whilst they plaie: for where other men turne ouer manie leaues to get bread and cheefe in their olde age, and studie twentie yeares to distill golde out of incke, our yoong maistres doo nothing but devise how to spend and ask counsaile of the wine and capons, how they may quicklieft consume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue secure from all such perturba-
tions: for (thankes bee to God) I am vacuus viator, and care not, though I mee te the Commissioners of New-market-heath at high midnight, for any crosstes, Images, or pictures that I carry about mee, more than needes.

Than needes, quoth I, nay, I would be ashamed of it, if Opus & Vfus were not knocking at my doore twentie times a weeke when I am not within: the more is the pitie, that such a Franke Gentleman as I, should want: but, since the dice doo runne so vntowardly on my side, I am partly prouided of a remedy. For wheras, those that stand most on their honour, haue shut vp their purses, & shift vs off with court-hollie-bread: & on the other side, a number of hypocritical hot-spurres, that haue God alwaies in their mouthes, will giue nothing for Gods sake: I haue clapt vp a handsome Supplication to the Diuell, and sent it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuer it.

And because you may beleeue mee the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumstance.

I was informd of late daies, that a certaine blinde Retayler called the Diuel, vied to lend money vpon pawnes or any thing, and would let one for a neede, haue a thousand poundes vppon a Statute Merchant of his soule: or if a man plide him throughly, would trust him vppon a Bill of his hand, without any more circumstaunce. Besides,
hee was noted for a priuie Benefactor to Traytors and Parasites, and to aduaunce foolees and affees farre sooner than any: to be a greedie pursuer of newes, and so famous a Politician in purchasing, that Hel, which at the beginning was but an obscure Village, is now become a huge citie, whervnto all countryes are Tributary.

These manifest coniecutures of Plentie, assembled in one common-place of ability, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elboe, til his full belly gaue me a full hand, and let him blood with my pen (if it might be) in the veine of liberality: and so (in short time) was this Paper-monster, Pierce Penileffe, begotten.

But written and all, heere lies the question, where shall I find this old Asse, that I may deliuer it? Maffe, thats true: they say the Lawyers haue the deuill and al: and it is like enough he is playing Ambodexter amongst them. Fie; fie, the deuill a drier in Westminster Hall: it can neuer be.

Now, I pray, what do you imagine him to be? Perhaps you thinke it is not possible he should be so graue. Oh then, you are in an errour, for he is as formal as the best Scruener of them all. Marry, he doth not vse to weare a night-cap, for his hornes will not let him: and yet I knowe a hundred, as well headed as he, that will make a iolly shift with
a Court-cup on their crownes, if the weather be colde.

To proceed with my tale: to Westminifter Hall I went, and made a search of Enquiry, from the blacke gowne to the buckram bagge, if there were any such Sergeant, Bencher, Counsailer, Attorney, or petitogger, as Signior Cornuto Diabolo, with the good face? But they al (vnâ voce) affirmed, that he was not there: marry, whether hee were at the Exchange or no, amongst the ritch Merchants, that they could not tell: but it was likelier of the two, that I shou'd meet with him, or heare of him, at the leaft, in those quarters. I faith, and say you fo, quoth I? and Ile beftow a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out.

Without more circumstance, thither came I: and, thrusting my selfe, as the manner is, amongst the confusion of languages, I asked (as before) whether he were there extant or no? But from one to another, Non novi Damonem, was all the anfwer I could get. At length (as Fortune serued) I lighted vpon an old, straddling Usurer, clad in a damaske casslocke, edged with Fox-fur, a paire of trunke flops, fagging down like a shoo-maker's wallet, and a short thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge: vpon his head he wore a filthy, coarsè biggin, & next it a garnish of night-caps, with a sage butten cap, of
the forme of a cow-sheard, ouerspread very orderly: a fat chuffe it was, I remember, with a gray beard cut short to the stumps, as though it were grimde, and a huge, woorme-eaten nofe, like a clufter of grapes hanging downe-wards. Of him I demaunded, if hee could tell mee any tidings of the partie I sought for.

By my troth, quoth he, stripling, (and then he ought) I sawe him not lately, nor know I certainly where he keepes: but thus much I heard / by a Broker, a friend of mine, that hath had some dealings with him in his time, that he is at home sicke of the goute, and will not bee spoken withal vnder more than thou art able to giue, som two or three [hundred] angels, if thou haft any fute to him: & then, perhaps, hee straine curtesie, with his legges in childe-bed, and come forth and talke with thee: but, otherwise, non est domi, hee is busie with Mammon, & t[h]e Prince of the North, how to build vp his kingdome, or sendeing his spirits abroad to undermine the maligners of his gouernment.

I, hearing of this colde comfort, tooke my leaue of him very faintly, and like a careles male-content, that knew not which way to turne, retired me to Paules, to seekke my dinner with Duke Humfrey; but, when I came there, the olde fouldioer was not vp. Hee is long a rising, thought I; but thats all
one, for hee that hath no money in his purse, must go dine with Sir John Best-betrust, at the signe of the chalk and the Post.

Two hongry turns had I scarce fetcht in this waft gallery, when I was encountred by a neat pedanticall fellow, in forme of a cittizen: who thrusting himselfe abruptly into my company, like an Intelligencer, began very earnestly to question me about the causé of my discontent, or what made me so sad, that seemed too young to be acquainted with sorrow. I nothing nice to unfold my estate to any what soever, discours to him the whole circumstance of my care, and what toyll and paines I had tooke in searching for him that would not be heard of. Why sir (quoth he), had I bene priuie to your purpose before, I could haue easd you of this trauell; for if it be the dewill you seeke for, know I am his man. I pray, sir, how might I call you? A knight of the Poft, quoth he, for so I am tearmed: a fellowe that will sweare you any thing for twelue pence: but indeed, I am a spirite in nature and essence, that take upon me this humaine shape, onely to set men together by the eares, and send soules by millions to hell.

Now trust me, a substantiall trade: but when doe you thinke you could send next to your maister? why, euery day: for there is not a
cormorant that dies, or Cut-purse that is hanged, but I dispatch letters by his soule to him, and to all my friends in the Low-cuntries: wherefore, if you haue any thing that you would haue transported, giue it me, and I will see it deliuered.

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certaine Suppli-cation heere vnto your Maister, which you may peruse if it please you. With that he opened it, and read as followeth.
To the high and mightie Prince of Darknessse,
Donfell dell Lucifer, King of Acheron, Stix,
and Phlegeton, duke of Tartary, mar-
quess of Cocytus, and Lord
high Regent of Lymbo:
his distrested

Orator, Pierce Pennileffe, wisheth encrease of damnation and malediction eternall, per Iesum Christum
Dominum Nostrum.

Oft humbly sueth vnto your sin-
fulnes, your single foald Orator,
Pierce Pennileffe: that whereas
your impious excellence hath had
the poore tennement of his purse
any time this halfe yeer for your daunc-
ing schoole, and he (notwithstanding) hath receiued no penny nor croffe for
farme, according to the usuall manner, it may please your gracelesse Maieftie to consider of him,
and giue order to your servuant Auarice he may be dispatched: insomuch as no man heere in London can haue a dauncing schoole without rent, and his wit and knaery cannot be maintained with nothing. Or, if this be not so plausible to your honorable infernalship, it might seeme good to your helhood to make extent vpon the soules of a number of vncharitable Cormorants, who, hauing incur'd the daunger of a Premunire with medling with matters that properly concerne your owne person, desere no longer to liue (as men) amongst men, but to bee incorporated in the society of diuels. By which meanes the mightie controller of fortune and imperious subuerter of desteny, delicious gold, the poore mans God, and Idoll of Princes (that lookes pale and wanne through long imprisonment) might at length be restored to his powrfull Monarchie, and eftsoon bee fette at liberty, to helpe his friends that haue neede of him.

I knowe a great sort of good fellowes that * Id est, for the would venture farre for his freedom,* and a number of needy Lawyers (who now mourn in threed-bare gownes for his thral-dome) that would goe neere to poison his keepers with false Latine, if that might procure his enlargement: but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, so that (poore creature)
hee can neither traffique with the Mercers and Tailers as he was wont, nor dominere in Tauernes as he ought.

Famine, Lent, and defoliation, fit in onyon-kind jackets before the doore of his indurance, as a Chorus in the Tragedy of Hospitality, to / tell hunger & pouerty thers no reliefe for them there : and in the inner part of this ugly habitation stands Greedinessse, prepared to deuoure all that enter, attyred in a Capouch of written parchment, buttond downe before with Labels of waxe, and lin'd with sheepes fells for warmenes: his Cap furd with cats skinnes, after the Muscouie fashion, and all to be taffeld with Angle-hookes, in stead of Aglets, ready to catch hold of all those to whom hee shewes any humblenes: for his breeches, they were made of the lifts of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents assured him and his heyres, to the ytter ouerthrowe of Bowcafes and cushin makers, and bumbafted they were, like Beere barrels, with statute Merchants and forseyturies: but of all, his shoos were the strangest, which, being nothing else but a couple of crab shells, were toothd at the toes with two sharp fixpennie nailes, that digd vp eueruy dunghill they came by for gold, and snarld at the stones as hee went in the street, because they weare so common for men, women, and children, to
tread vpon, and hee could not devise how to wrest an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walks hee vp and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand instead of a staffe, and a Sarians Mace in his mouth, (which night and day he gnaws vpon) and either busies himselfe in setting siluer lime twigs, to entangle yoong Gentlemen, and casting foorth silken shrops, to catch Woodcocks, or in fryuing of Muckehills and shop-duft, whereof he will boult a whole cartload to gaine a bowd Pinne.

On the other side, Dame Niggardize, his wife, in a fedge rugge kirtle, that had beene a mat time out of minde, a course hempen raile about her shoulders, borrowed of the one end of a hop-bag, an apron made of Almanackes out of date, (such as stand vpon screens, or on the backside of a dore in a Chandlers shop) & an old wifes pudding pan on her head, thrumd with the parings of her nailes, fate barrelling vp the droppings of her nose, in stead of oyle, to faime wool withall, and would not adventure to spit without halfe a dozen of porrengers at her elbow.

The house, (or rather the hell) where these two Earthwormes encaptiued this beautifull Substaunce, was vaft, large, strong built, and well furnishd, all faue the Kitchin: for that was no bigger than the
Cooks roome in a shipp, with a little court chimney, about the compass of a Parenthesis in proclamation-print: then judge you what dim/inutiue dishes came out of this doues-neat. So likewise, of the Buttrie: for whereas in houses of such stately foundation, that are built to outward shewe so magnificent, euery Office is answerable to the Hall, which is principall, there the Buttrie was no more but a blind Cole-houfe, vnder a paire of stayres, wherein (vprising & down lying) was but one single kilderkin of small beere, that wold make a man, with a carroufe of a spooneful, runne through an Alphabet of faces. Nor vfd they any glaffes or cups (as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an Ale-houfe) was a meales allowance for the whole houshold. It were lamentable to tell what miserie the Rattes and Myce endured in this hard world: how, when all supply of vitualls failed them, they went a Boot-haling one night to Sinior Greedinesse bed-chamber, where finding nothing but emptines and vaftitie, they encountred (after long inquisitiō) with a cod-peece, well dunged & manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father had retaint from his Bachelorship, vntill the eating of these presents). Vppon that they set, and with a courageous assault rent it cleane away from the
breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their shoulders betwixt them. The verie spiders and dust weauers, that wont to set vp their loomes in euery windowe, decaied and vndone through the extreame dearth of the place, (that afforded them no matter to worke on) were constrained to breake, against their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing: and generally, not a flea nor a cricket that carried anie braue minde, that would stay there after he had once tastd the order of their fare. Onely vnfortunate golde (a pre-deftinat flaeue to drudges and fooles) liues in endleffe bondage ther amongst them, and may no way be releaft, except you send the rot halfe a yeare amongst his keepers, and so make them away with a murrion, one after another.

O but a far greater enormitie raigneth in the heart of the Court: Pride, the peruerter of all Vertue, fitteth appareled in the Merchants spoiles, and ruine of yoong Citizens, and scorneth Learning, that gaue their vp-start Fathers titles of Gentry.

All malcontent fits the greasie sonne of a Cloathier, and complaines (like a decaied Earle) of the ruine of ancient houses: whereas, the Weauers loomes firft framed the web of his honour, and the locks/of wool,
that bushes and brambles have tooke for toule of insolent sheepe, that would needs striue for the wall of a fir-bush, haue made him of the tenths of their tarre, a Squier of low degree: and of the collections of the scatterings, a Justice, Tam Marti quam Mercurio, of Peace and of Coram. Hee will bee humorous, forsoth, and haue a broode of fashions by himselfe. Sometimes (because Loue commonly weares the liueray of Witte) hee will be an Inamorato Poeta, and sonnet a whole quire of paper in praise of Lady Swin-fnout, his yeolow-fac’d Mistres, and ware a feather of her rain-beaten fanne for a fauor, like a fore-horse. Al Italianato is his talke, and his spade peake is as sharpe as if he had been a Pioner before the walles of Roan. Hee will despise the barbarisme of his owne Countrey, and tell a whole Legend of lyes of his trauailes vnto Constan-tinople. If he be challenged to fight, for his delaterye excuse, hee ob-iects that it is not the cuftome of the Spaniard, or the Germaine, to looke backe to every dog that barkes. You shall see a dapper Jacke, that hath beene but ouer at Deepe, wring his face round about, as a man would stirre vp a mustard pot, and talke English through the teeth, like Jaques Scabd-hams, or Monsieur Mingo de Mouftrap: when (poore slawe) he hath but dipt his bread in wilde Boares greace, and come home againe: or beene
bitten by the shinnes by a Wolfe: and faith, he hath adventured vppon the Barricadoes of Gurney; or Guingan, and fought with the yoong Guise hand to hand.

Some thinke to be counted rare Politicians and Statefmen, by beeing solitary: as who should say, I am a wise man, a braue man, Secreta mea mihi: Frustra sapit, qui fibi non sapit: and there is no man worthy of my companie or friendship: when, although he goes ungartred like a malecontent Cutpurfsle, and weares his hat ouer his eies like one of the cursed crue, yet cannot his stabbing dagger, or his nittie loue-locke, keepe him out of the Legend of fantastical cockscombs. I pray ye, good Mounfsier Diuell, take some order, that the strectes be not pestered with them so as they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his belly quite and cleane, to make his backe a certaine kind of a brokerly Gentleman: and nowe & then (once or twice in a Tearme) comes/to the eighteene pence Ordenary, because hee would be seen amongst Causaliers and braue courtyers, liuing otherwise all the yeere long with salt Butter & Holland chefe in his chamber, should take vppe a scornfull melancholy in his gate & countenance, course & talke, as though our common-welth were but a mockery of gouern-
ment, and our Maiefrates fooles, who wronged him in not looking into his deserts, not employing him in State matters, and that, if more regard were not had of him very shortly, the whole Realme should haue a mistle of him, &c he would go (I mary would he) where he should be more accounted off.

Is it not wonderfull ill-provided, I say, that this disdainfull companion is not made one of the fraternity of Foole, to talke before great States, with some olde mothe-eaten Polititian, of mending high waies, and leading Armies into Fraunce?

A young Heyre, or Cockney, that is his Mothers Darling, if hee haue playde the waste-good at the Innes of the Court, or about London, and that neither his Students pension, nor his vnthriftes credite, will serue to maintaine his Collidge of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his fortune, because she made him not King of the Indies, and sweares and flares, after ten in the hundreth, that nere a such Peasant, as his Father or brother, shall keepe him vnder: hee will to the fea, and teare the gold out of the Spaniards throats, but he will haue it, byrladie: And when he comes there, poore soule, hee lyes in brine, in Balift, and is lamentable sicke of the scurvyes: his daintie fare is turned to a hungry feast of Dogs and Cats, or Haberdine and poore John, at the
moft, and which is lamentablest of all, that without Mustard.

As a mad Ruffion, on a time, being in danger of shipwrack by a tempest, and seeing all other at their vowes and praiers, that if it would please God, of his infinite goodnesse, to deluyer them out of that imminent danger, one woulde abjure this sinne whereunto he was adijeted: an other, make satisfaction for that violenc he had committed: he, in a desperate iest, began thus to reconcile his soule to heauen.

O Lord, if it may seeme good to thee to deliver me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy Throne, and all thy starie Host, never to eate Haberdine more whilest I liue.

Well, so it fell out, that the Sky cleared and the tempest ceas’d, and this carelesse wretch, that made such a mockery of praier, readie to set foote a Land, cryed out: not without Mustard, good Lord, not without Mustard: as though it had been the greatest torment in the world, to haue eaten Haberdine without Mustard. But this by the way, what penance can be greater for Pride, than to let it swinge in hys owne halter? Dulce bellum inexpertis: there is no man loues the smoake of his owne Countrey, that hath not been syngde in the flame of an other foyle. It is a pleasant thing, ouer a full pot, to read the fable of thirs
Tantalius: but a hard matter to digest salt meates at Sea, with stinking water.

Another misery of Pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of deepe scholers, cannot be content to participate one faith with all Christendome, but, because they will get a name to their vaineglorie they will set their selfe-loue to study to inuent new fects of singularitie, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr fects called after their names, as Donatists of Donatus, Arrians of Arrius, & a number more new faith-founders, that haue made England the exchange of Innovations, & almost asmuch confusion of Religion in every Quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of Babell. Whence, a number that fetch the Articles of their Beleefe out of Arifotle, & thinke of heauen and hell as the Heathen Philofophers, take occasion to deride our Eccle-iafticall State, & all Ceremonies of Diuine wor-ship, as bug-beares and fear-crowes, because (like Herodes fouldiers) we diuide Chrifts garment amongst vs in so many peeces, and of the vesture of salvation make some of vs Babies & apes coates, others straight trusses & Diuells breeches: some gally-gascoines, or a shipmans hose, like the Ana-baptists & adulterous Familifts: others with the Martinifts, a hood with two faces, to hide their
hypocrisie: and, to conclude, some, like the Barrowifts and Greenwodians, a garment full of the plague, which is not to be wore before it be new waft.

Hence Atheists triumph and reioyce, and talke as prophaneely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare say there be Mathematitions abroad that will prooue men before Adam, and they are harboured in high places, who will maintaine it to the death, that there are no diuells.

It is a shame (senior Belzibub!) that you should suffer your selfe thus / to be tearmed a bastard, or not approue to your pre-destinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are hee that must owne them. These are but the suburbes of the sinne we haue in hand: I muft describe to you a large cittie, wholy inhabited with this damnable enormitie.

In one place let me shewe you a base Artificer, that hath no revenues to boast on but a Needle in his bosome, as braue as any Pensioner or Nobleman.

In an other corner, Misfris Minx, a Marchants wife, that wil eate no cherries, forsooth, but when they are at twenty shillings a pound, that lookes as simperingly as if she were besmeard, & iets it as gingerly as if she
were dancing the Canaries: she is so finicall in her speach, as though she spake nothing but what she had first sawd ouer before in her Samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets. What should I tell how squeamis the is in her dyet, what toyle she puts her poore seruants vnto, to make her looking glassies in the pavenement? how she wil not goe into the fields, to cowre on the greene graffe, but shee muft haue a Coatch for her convoy: and spends halfe a day in pranking her selfe if she be inuited to anie strange place? Is not this the exceste of pride, signior Sathan? Goe too, you are vnwife, if you make her not a chiefe Saint in your Calender.

The next obieçt that encounters my eyes, in some such obscure vpstart gallants, as without desert or seruice, are raised from the plough to be checkmate with Princes: and these I can no better compare than to creatures that are bred Sine coitu, as crickets in chimnyes: to which I re semble poore Scullians, that, from turning spit in the chimney corner, are on the sodaine hoised vp from the Kitchin into the waiting chamber, or made Barons of the beanes, and Mar quekses of the mary-boanes: some by corrupt water, as gnats, to which we may liken Brewers, that, by retayling filthy Thames water, come in few

N. II.
yers to be worth fortie or fiftie thousand pound: others by dead wine, as little flying wormes: and so the Vintners in like cafe: others by flime, as frogs, which may be alluded to Mother Bunches flimie ale, that hath made her, & some other of her fil-pot family so wealthy: others by dirt, as worms: and so I know many gold-finers & hostlers come vp: some by hearbs, as cankers, & after the fame fort our Apothecaries: others by ashes, as Scarabes: and how else get our Colliers the pence? Others from the putrified flesh of dead beasts, as Bees of Bulls, & butchers by fly-blowne beefe, wafpes of horses, and Hackney-men by selling their lame iades to hunts-men, for carrion.

Yet am I not against it, that these men by their mechanicall trades should come to be sparage gentlemen & chuff-headed Burghomasters: sparrow a flower that never groweth but through mans dong, but that better places should bee possessed by coyftrells, & the Coblers crowe, for crying but aue Cæsar, be more esteemed than rarer birds, that have warbled sweeter notes vnrewarded. But it is no meruaile: for as Hemlocke fatteth Quailes, & Henbane Swine, which to al other is poynson, so some mens vices have power to advaunce them, which would subuert any else that should seeke to climbe by them: and it is inough in them, that they can pare their nailes well, to get them a liuving, when
as the feauen libera ll Sciences & a good leg, will scarce get a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet.

These whelpes of the first litter of Gentilitie, these Exhalations, drawen vp to the heauen of honor from the dunghil of abieft fortune, have long been on horsebacke to come riding to your Diuelfhip: but, I know not how, like Saint George, they are alwaies moet, but never moue. Here they out-face Towne & countrey, & doo nothing but bandy factions with their betters. Their bigge limbes yeeld the Common-wealth no other service but idle sweate, & their heads, like rough hewed Gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the block-houses for sleepe. Raynard, the Fox, may well beare vp his taile in the Lions denne, but when he comes abroad, he is afraide of euery dogge that barkes. What curre will not bawle, & be ready to flye in a mans face, when he is set on by his master, who, if hee bee not by to encourage him, he casts his taile betwixt his legges, & steales away like a sheepe byter. Vlifes was a tall man vnder Aias shield: but by himselfe hee would neuer aduenture but in the night. Pride is neuer built but vpon some pillers: & let his supporters faile him neuer so little, you shall finde him very humble in \frac{1}{2} dust. Wit oftentimes stands in stead of a chiefe arche to vnderprop it, in soldiers streght, in womes beauty.
Drudges, that have no extraordinarie gifts of body nor of minde, filche themselues into some Noble mans seruice, either by bribes or by flattery, and, when they are there, they so labour it with cap & knee, and ply it with priuie whisperinges, that they wring themselues into his good opinion ere he be a ware. Then, doo they vaunt themselues/ouer the common multitude, and are readie to braue anie man that stands by himselfe. Their Lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the Peacockes taile of their boasting, and any thing that is said or done to the vnhandfoming of their ambition is straight wreted to the name of treason. Thus do weedes grow vp whiles no man regards them, and the Ship of Fooles is arrived in the Hauen of Felicitie, whilest the Scoutes of Enuiie contemne the attempts of any such small Barkes.

But beware you that be great mens Favorites: let not a feruile, insinuating flaue, creepe betwixt your legges into credit with your Lords: for pepants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cheriſht in the boſome of prosperitie, will straight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them room to warme them. The fon of a churle cannot chooſe but prooue ingrateful, like his Father. Trust not a villaine that hath beene miserable, and is sodainly grown happie.
Vertue ascendeth by degrees of desert into dignitie: gold & luft may lead a man a nearer way to pro-
motion: but he that hath neither comelineffe nor
coine to commend him, undoubtedly* As by carrying
strydes ouer time by stratagems,* if of
a moale-hil he grows to a mountaine in
a moment. This is that which I urge: there is no
friendhipe to bee had with him that is resolute to
doe or suffer any thing rather than to endure the
defsenie whereto he was borne: for he will not
spare his owne Father or Brother, to make himselfe
a Gentleman.

Fraunce, Italy, and Spaine, are all full of these
false hearted Machiuillians; but properly Pride is
the disease of the Spaniard, who is born a Bragart in his mothers womb: for, if he be but 17 years old, and hath come to the
place where a Field was fought, (though halfe
a yeare before) he then talks like one of the Giants
that made warre against Heauen, and stands vpon
his honor, as much as if he were one of Augustus
Souldiers, of whom he first instituted the order of
Heralds: and let a man soothe him in this vaine
of kilcowe vanitie, you may commaund his hart
out of his belly, to make you a rasher on the
coales, if you will next your heart.

The Italian is a more cunning proud fellowe, and
hides his humour farre cleanlier, and indeed feemes
to take a pride in humilitie, & will profer a stranger more courteous than hee means to per-
forme. Hee hateth him deadly that takes him at his word: as, for example, if vpon an occasion of meeting, he request you to dinner or supper at his house, / and that at the first or second intreatie you promise to bee his guest, he will be the mortalst enemie you haue: but if you deny him, he will thinke you haue manners and good bringing vp, and will loue you as his brother: marry, at the third or fourth time you must not refuse him. Of al things he counteth it a mighty disgrace to haue a man passe juftling by him in haft on a narrowe caufe, and ask him no leave, which he never reuengeth with leffe then a stab.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne nature) is wholle compaft of deceivable Courtship, and for the most part, loues none but himselfe and his pleafure: yet though he be the moft Grand Signeur of them all, he will say, A vostre fervice & commandemente Mounfeur, to the meaneft vaiffeile he meets. Hee thinkes he doth a great favour to that gentleman, or follower of his, to whom hee talks sitting on his close ftoole: and with that favour (I haue heard) the Princes wownted to grace the Noble men of France: and a great man of their Nation comming in time past ouer into England, and beeing here very honorably
received, he in requital of his admirable entertainment, on an euening going to the priuie, (as it were to honour extraordinarily our English Lords, appointed to attend upon him) gave one the candle, another his girdle, & another the paper: but they (not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing) accompanying him to the priuie dore, set downe the trash, and so left him: which he, considering what inestimable kindnes he extended to them therein more than visible, tooke very hainously.

The most grosse and fenselesse proud dolts (in a difference from all these kinds) are the Danes, who stand so much upon their unweldy burliboand souldiery, that they account of no man that hath not a battle Axe at his girdle to hough dogs with, or weares not a cockes feather in a thrumd hat like a cavalier: briefly, he is the best foole bragart under heaven. For besides nature hath lent him a flaberkin face, like one of the foure winds, and cheeks that sag like a womans dugs ouer his chin-bone, his apparel is so stuff vp with bladders of Taffatie, and his back like biefes stuff with Parfly, so drawne out with Ribands and devises, and blisterd with light farcenet baftings, that you would thinke him nothing but a swarame of Butterflies, if you saw him a far off.* Thus walkes hee vp and downe in his Maiefty, taking a yard of the pride of danes.
PIERC PENILESSE.

marks, look on his fingers, & you shall be sure to find half a dozen silver rings, worth three pence a pence; ground at every step, and stamps on the earth so terrible, as if he meant to knocke vppe a spirite, when (foule drunken bezzle) if an Englishman set his little finger to him, he fall's like a hogs-trough that is set on one end. Therfore, I am the more vehement against them, because they are an arrogant Asse-headed people, that naturally hate learning, and all them that loue it: yea, & for they would utterly roote it out from among them, they haue with-drawn al rewards from the Professors therof. Not Barbary it self is halfe so barbarous as they are.

First, whereas the hope of honour maketh a Souldior in England: Byshopricks, Deanries, Prebendaries, and other priuate dignities, animate our Diuines to such excellence: the ciuill Lawyers haue their degrees & consiftories of honour by themselues, equal in place with Knights and Esquiers: the common Lawyers (suppose in the beginning they are but husbandmens sons) come in time to be chiefe Fathers of the land, and manie of them not the meanest of the Priuie Counsell.

There, the soouldior may fight himselfe out of his skinne, and do more exploits than hee hath doyts in his purse, before from a common Mercenary he come to be Corporal of the mould cheefe: or the Lieutenant
get a Captainship. None but the son of a Corporall must be a Corporall, nor any be Captaine, but the lawfull begotten of a Captaines body. Bishops, Deans, Prebendaries, why they know no such functions: a sort of ragged Ministers they haue, of whom they count as basely, as water-bearers. If any of the Noblemen refrain three howers in his life time from drinking, to study the Lawes, hee may perhaps haue a little more gouernment put into his hands than an other: but, otherwise, Burgomasters & Gentlemen beare all the sway of both swords, spiritual and temporall. It is death there for anie but a husbandman to marry a husbandmans daughter, or a Gentlemans childe to ioyne with any but the sonne of a Gentleman. Marry this, the king may well banish, but hee cannot put a Gentleman vnto death in any cause whatsoever, which makes them stand vppon it so proudly as they doe. For fashion sake some will put their children to schoole, but they set them not to it till they are foureteene yeere old: so that you shall see a great boy with a beard learne his A B C, and sit weeping vnder the rod, when he is thirtie yeeres old.

I will not stand to inferre what a prejudice it is to the thrift of a florishing State, to make labor without hope. nought but the puddle water of penury to drinke:
to clippe the winges of a high towring Faulcon, who, wheras she wont in her fethered youthfullnesse, to looke with an amiable eye on her gray breast, and her speckled fide sayles, all finnowed with filuer quilles, and to dryue whole Armies of fearefull foules before her to her maifters Table; now she fits sadly on the ground, picking of wormes, mourning the crueltie of those vngentleman-like idle hands, that dismembreth the beauty of her trayne.

You all knowe that man (infomuch as hee is the Image of God) delighteth in honour and worship, and all holy Writ warrantes that delight, so it bee not derogatory to any part of Gods owne worship. Now, take away that delight, a discontented idlenesse ouertakes him. For his hire, any handycraft man, be he Carpenter Joyner or Painter, will ploddingly do his day-labor: but to adde credit and fame to his workmanship, or to winne a maistery to himselfe aboue all other, hee will make a further asfay in his trade than euer hitherto he did: hee will haue a thousand flourishes, which before he neuer thought vppon, and in one day ridde more out of hand, than earst he did in ten: So in Armes, so in Arts: if titles of fame and glory be proposed to forward minds, or that any foueraigntie (whose sweetnes they haue not yet felt) be fet in likely view for them to fore too, they will make a ladder
PIERCE PENILESSE.

of cord of the links of their braines, but they will fasten their handes, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue blisse, which they already enjoy by admiration. Experience reproves me for a foole, for delating on so manifeft a cafe.

The Danes are burften-bellied fots, that are to be confuted with nothing but Tankards or quart pots, and Ouid might as wel haue read his verfes to the Getes that vnderstood him not, as a man talke reafon to them that haue no eares but their mouths, nor fense but of that which they swallow downe their throats. God fo loue me, as I loue the quicke-witted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, because they mortally deteft this furley swinish Generation.

I need not fetch colours from other countries to paint the vglie vifage of Pride, since her picture is fet forth in fo many painted faces here at home. What drugs, what forceries, what oiles, what waters, what oyntments, doe our curious Dames vfe to inlarge our withered* beauties. Their lips are as lauifhly red, as if they vfed to kiffe an okerman every morning, and their cheeks fuger-candied & cherry blusht fo sweetly after the colour* of a newe Lord Mayors poftes, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday

* Withered flowers need much water-ing.
* And will in-dure all wethers as wel as they. They may well be called counterfaiutes, since the beauty they imitate is counterfeyted.
were harde at the doore: so that if a Painter were
to drawe any of their counterfets on a Table, he
needes no more but wet his pencill, and dab it on
their cheekes, and he shall haue vermilion
and white enough to furnishe out his
worke, though he leaue his tar-boxe
at home behinde him. Wise was that
fin-washing Poet that made the Ballet
of Blue starch and poaking stick, for
indeed the lawne of licentiousnesse hath
confumed all the wheate of hospitallitie.
It is said, Laurence Lucifer, that you
went vp and downe London crying there
like a lanterne and candle man. I meruaile no
Laundresse would giue you the washing and starch-
ing of your face for your labour, for God knowes it
is as blacke as the blacke Prince.

It is suspected you haue been a great tobacco-
taker* in your youth, which caufeth it
to come so to passe: but Dame Nature,
your nurse, was partly in fault, else she
might haue remedied it. *She should haue
noynted your face ouer night with Lac virginis,
which, baking vpon it in bed till the
morning, she might haue pild off the
scale like the skin of a custard, and
making a posset of vergis mixt with the oyle of
Tartary and Camphire, and bathde it in it a

* & Marked these
leaping Metaphors, good
people.

So saleth the
learned Poli-
histor Rime-
rus, in his
first booke,
first page, &
first line of
his Ballad of
blew starch
and poaking
stickes.
quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying pan. I warrant, we haue old hackfters in this great Grandmother of Corporations, Madame Troyouant, that haue not backbited anie of their neighbours with the tooth of enuy this twentie yeare, in the wrinckles of whose face, yee may hide false dice, and play at cherry pit in the dint of their cheekes: yet these aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plaistered ouer, & weare nossegayes of yeelow haire on their furious foreheads, when age hath written, Hoe God, be here, on their bald burnt parchment pates. Pifh, pifh, what talke you of old age or balde pates? men & women that haue gone vnder the South pole,* must lay off their furde night-caps in spight of their teeth, & become yeomen of the Vineger bottle: a close periwig hides al the finnes of an old whore-master; but Cucullus non facit Monachum,* tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a mans finnes are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a haire bredth betwixt them and the falling sicknes. The times are dangerous, & this is an yron age, or rather no yron age, for swords & bucklers goe to pawne a pace in Long lane: but a tinne age: for tinne and pewter are
more esteemed than Latine. You that be wife, despise it, abhorre it, neglect it, for what should a man care for gold that cannot get it.

An Antiquarie is an honest man, for he had rather scrape a piece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of Ploidens standish. I know manie wife Gentlemen of this mufty vocation, who out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retailing of Alexander's stirrops, because (in veritie) there is not such a strong piece of stretching leather made now adayes, nor yron so well tempred for anie money. They will blow their nose in a box, and say it is the spettle that Diogenes spat in ones face: who beeing invited to dinner to his house, that was neat and braue in all points as might be devised, & the gruting Dog, somewhat troubled with the rheume (by means of his long fasting and staying for dinner more than wont), spat full in his Hostes face: and being askt the reason of it, said, it was the fouleft place he could spie out in all his house. Let their Mistres (or some other woman) giue them a fether of her fanne for a favor, & if one askt them what it is? they make answer, a plume of the Phenix, whereof there is but one in all the whole world. A thousand guegawes and toyes haue they in their chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite ex-
pence, and are made beleue of them that sel them, that they are rare & pretious things, when they haue gathered them vpon some dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chauncce. I know one fold an old rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and bredth of Christs Tombe. Let a Tinker take a peece of brasfe worth a halfpeny, and set strange stamps on it, & I warrant he may make it more worth to him of some fantafsticall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the diseafe of our newfangled humorifts, that know not what to doo with their welth. It argueth a verie ruf ty wit, so to doate on worme-eaten Elde.

Out vpon it, how long is Pride a dressing her selfe? Enuiie, awake, for thou muft appeare before Nicalao Malewolo, great Mufter-mafters of hell. Marke you this flie mate, how smoothely hee lookes? The Poets were ill aduised that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothd Beldam, with hollow eyes, pale cheeks, and snakie haire: for he is not onely a man, but a iolly luftie olde Gentleman, that will winke, and laugh, and ieaf drily, as if he were the honefteft of a thousand: and I warrant you shall not heare a foule word come from him in a yeare. I will not contradicft it, but the Dog may worry a sheepe
in the dark, and thruft his necke into the collar of clemencie & pitie when he hath done: as who shoulde say, God forgiue him, hee was a sleepe in the shambles, when the innocent was done to death. But openly, Enuie sets a ciuil, fatherly countenaunce vpon it, & hath not so much as a drop of bloud in his face, to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next to Pride: for it is his adopted sonne: And hence comes it, that proud men repine at others prosperitie, and greeue that any should be great but themselfes. Meus cujusque, is est quisque; it is a Proverbe that is as hoarie as Dutch-butter. If a man wil goe to the diuell, he may go to the diuel: there are a thousand iugling tricks to be vfed at hey passe, come aloft: and the world hath cords enough to trufe vp a calfe that stands in ones way. Enuie is a Crocodile that weeps when he kils, & fightes with none but he feeds on. This is the nature of this quickfighted monster, hee wil endure any paines to endamage another: waft his body with vndertaking exploites that would require ten mens strengthes, rather than any should get a penny but himselfe, bleare his eyes to stand in his neighbors light, and to conclude, like Atlas vnderproppe heauen, rather than any shoulde be in heauen that he likte not of, or come vnto heauen by any other meanes but by him.
You goodman wandrer about the world, how doe ye spende your time, that you do not rid vs of these pestilent members? You are vnworthy to haue an office, if you can execute it no better. Behold another enemy of mankind, besides thy selfe, exalted in the South, Philip of Spaine: who not contented to be the God of gold, and chieflieft commander of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirst after humane bloud, when his foot is on the threshold of the graue: and as a wolfe, being about to deuoure a horfe, doth balift his belly with earth, that he may hang the heauier vppon him, and then forcibly flies in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp: so this woluish vnnatural vfurper, being about to deuoure all Christendome by invaſion, doth cramme his treasures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flies in the bosome of France & Belgia, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the Wolfe his faſtning) till he hath deuoured their welfare, & made the war-wafted carcafes of both kingdoms a pray for his tyrannie. Onely poore England giues him bread for his cake, and holds him out at the arms end. His Armados (that like a high wood, ouer-shadowed the shrubbes of our /low ships) fled from the breath of our Cannons, as vapors before the Sunne, or as the
Elephant flies from the Ramme, or the Sea-whale from the noyse of parched bones. The winds, enuying that the aire should be dimmed with such a Chaos of woodden clowds, raised vp high bulwarks of bellowing waues, where Death shotte at their disorderd Nauy: and the Rocks with their ouer-hanging iawes, eat vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So perisht our foes, so the Heauens did fight for vs. Praterit Hippomenes, resonant spectacula plaujs.

I do not doubt (Doctor Diuell) but you were present in this action, or passion rather, and helpt to bore holes in ships to make them finke faster; and rence out Galley-foifts with salt water, that flunke like suftie barrels with their Maisters feare. It will be a good while ere you do as much for the King, as you did for his subiects. I would haue ye perswade an Armie of goutie Vfurers to goe to Sea vppon a boon voyage: trie if you can tempt Enuy to embarke himself in the mal'-aduenture, and leaue troubling thestroke, that Poets & good fellowes may drinke, & Souldiers sing Placebo, that haue murmured so long at the waters of strife.

But that wil neuer bee: for as long as Pride, Riot, and Whoredome are the companions of yoong Courtiers, they wil always bee hungry, and ready to bite at every Dog that hath a boane
giuen him beside themselues. Iesu, what secret grudge and rancour raignes amongst them, one being ready to dispaire of himself, if he see y Prince but giue his fellow a faire looke, or to die for griefe if he be put down in brauery neuer so litle. Yet this custome haue our false harts fetcht from other countries, that they wil sweare & protest loue, where they hate deadly, and smile on him most kindly, whose subuerfion in foule they haue vowed. Fraus sublimi regnat in aula. Tis rare to finde a true frend in Kings Pallaces: either thou must be so miserable that thou fall into the hands of scornful pitie, or thou canst not escape the sting of enuy. In one thought, assemble the famous men of all ages, and tel me which of them all fate in the sunshine of his soueraignes grace, or went great of low beginnings, but he was spite-blasted, heaued at, & ill spoken of: and that of those that bare them most countenance. But were enuy nought but words, it might seeme to be onely womens sinne: but it hath a lewd mate hanging on his fleeue, called Murther, a sterne fellowe, that (like a Murder, the companion of Enuie. heart: hee hath more shapes than Proteus, and will shifte himselfe, vpon any occasion of reuenge-ment, into a man's dish, his drinke, his apparell, his rings, his stirrops, his nossegay.
O Italie, the Academie of manslaughter, the sporting place of murder, the Apothecary-shop of poison for all Nations: how many kind of weapons hast thou invented for malice? Suppose I love a man's wife, whose husband yet liues, and cannot enjoy her for his jealous overlooking: Phisicke, or rather, the art of murder, (as it may be vsed) will lend one a Medicine, which shall make him away, in the nature of that disease he is most subject to, whether in the space of a yeare, a moneth, halfe a yeere, or what tract of time you will, more or lesse.

In Rome the Papall Chayre is washt, every yeere at the furthest, with this oyle of Aconitum. I pray God, the King of Spayne feasted not our holy father Sextus, that was last, with such conferue of Henbane: for it was credibly reported hee loved him not, and this, that is now, is a God made with his owne hands: as it may appeare by the Pasquil that was set vp of him, in manner of a note, presently after his election, Sol. Re. Me. Fa. that is to say, Solus Rex me facit; onely the K. of Spaine made me Pope. I am no Chronicler from our owne Countrey, but if probable suspension might bee heard vpon his oath, I thinke some mens soules would bee canonized for Martyrs, that on the earth did sware it as Monarchies.
Is it your will and pleasure (noble Lants-graue of Lymbo) to let vs haue leffe carousing to your health in poifon, fewer vnnder-hand conspirings, or open quarrels executed onely in wordes, as they are in the worlde now a dayes: as if men will needs carouse, conspire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians hall of Hell: and there bandy balls of Brimstone at one anothers head, and not trouble our peaceable Paradife with their priuate hurliburlies about strumpets, where no weapon (as in Adams Paradife) shold be named: but onely the Angell of prouidence f tand with a fyry fword at the gate, to keep out our enemies.

A Perturbation of mind (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former: For, whereas Enuie cannot be faide to bee but in respect of our Superiours, Wrath respecteth no degrees nor persons, but is equally armed agaynst all that offende him. / A harebraind little Dwarfe it is, with a swarth vifage, that hath his hart at his tongues end, if he be contraride, and will be sure to do no right nor take no wrong. If hee bee a Iudge or a Iustice (as sometimes the Lyon comes to giue sentence against the Lamb), then he sweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, & makes Newgate a Noune Subftantie, whereto...
common name for a man or a woman. all his other words are but Adieciuies. Lightly, hee is an olde man: (for those yeares are most wayward and teatish) yet be he neuer so old or so froward, since Auarice likewise is a fellow vice of those fraile yeares, we must set one extreame to friue with another, and alay the anger of oppression by the sweet incense of a newe purse of angels: or the doting Planet may haue such predominance in these wicked Elders of Israel, that, if you send your wife, or some other female, to plead for you, she may get your pardon vpon promife of better acquaintance. But whist, these are the workes of darkness, and may not be talkt of in the day time: Fury is a heate or fire, & must bee quencht with maides water.

Amongst other cholericke wise Iustices, he was one, that hauing a play presented before him and his Towneship by Tarlton and the rest of his fellowes, her Maiefties seruants, and they were now entring into their first merriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when Tarlton first peept out his head. Whereat the Iustice, not a little moued, and seeing with his beckes and nods, hee could not make them ceafe, he went with his staffe, & beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but Farmers and poore countrey hyndes, would presume to laugh at the Queenes
men, & make no more account of her cloath in his presence.

The causes conducting vnto wrath are as diuers as the actions of a mans life. Some will take on like a mad man, if they see a pigge come to the table. *Sotericus*, the Surgeon, was cholericke at fight of Sturgeon. The Irishman will draw his dagger, and bee ready to kill & slay, if one breake winde in his company: and so some of our English men, that be Souldiers, if one giue them the lye: but these are light matters, whereof *Pierce* complaineth not.

Be aduertifed, Master *Os fatidum*, Bedle of the Blackesmithes, that Lawyers cannot deuise which way in the world to begge, they are so troubled with bramblements and futes euery Tearme, of Yeomen and Gentlemen that fall out for nothing. If *John a Nokes* his henne doo but leap into *Elizabeth de Gappes* close, shee will neuer leave to haunt her husband, till he bring it to a *Nisi prius*. One while, the Parson sueth the parifhioner for bringing home his tythes: another while, the Parishioner sueth the Parson for not taking away his Tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a Butcher, who driuing two Calues ouer a Common, that were coupled together by the neckes with an Oken With, in the way where they should
passe, there lay a poore, leane Mare, with a galde backe: to whom they comming (as chance fell out), one of one side, and the other of the other, smelling on her, (as their manner is) the midst of the With that was betwixt their necks rubd her and grated her on the fore backe, that shee started and rose vp, and hung them both on her backe as a beame: which, being but a rough plaister to her raw vlcer, she ran away with them (as she were frantick) into the Fens, where the Butcher could not follow them, and drownde both her selfe and them in a Quagmyre. Now, the owner of the Mare is in law with the Butcher for the losse of his Mare, and the Butcher enterchangably endites him for his Calues. I pray ye, Timothy Tempter, be an Arbitrator betwixt them, & couple them both by the neckes, (as the Calues were) and carry them to Hel on your backe, and then, I hope, they wyll be quiet.

The chiefe spur vnto wrath is Drunkennesse, which, as the touch of an Ashen bough, causeth a gidinesse in the Vipers head, and the Batte, lightly strooke with the leafe of a Tree, loseth his remembrance: so they, being but lightly sprinkled with the iuyce of the Hop, become fencelesse, and haue their reaon strooken blind, as soone as euer the Cup scaleth the Fortresse of their Nose. Then run their words at random, like a dog that hath
loft his master, and are vppe with this man & that man, & generally inuey against al me: but thosè that keep a wet corner for a friend, and will not thinke fcorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a Souldiour: & so long do they pra&ie this vaine on their Ale-bench, that when they are sober, they cannot leave it. There be thosè that get their living all the yeere long, by nothing but rayling.

Not farre from Chester, I knewe an odde foule-mouthde knaue, called Charles the Fryer, that had a face so parboyled with mens spitting on it, and a backe so often knighted in Bridewell, that it was im-possible for any shame or punishment to terrifie him from ill speaking. Noblemen hee would liken to more vgly things than himselfe: some / to Alter my most hearty commendations, with a dash ouer the head: others to guilded chines of beefe, or a shoemaker sweating, when he puls on a shoo: another to an old verse in Cato, Ad consilium ne accefferis, antequam voceris: another to a Spanish Codpiffe: another, that his face was not yet finisht, with such like innumerable absurd allusions: yea, what was he in the Court but hee had a comparifon instead of a Capcase to put him in. Vpon a time, being challengde at his owne weapon in a priuate Chamber, by a great personage, (rayling, I meane) he so far outftript him in villainous words, and
ouer-bandied him in bitter tearms, that the name of sport could not persuade him patience, or containe his furie in any degrees of ieaft, but needs he must wreake himselfe vpon him: neyther would a comon reuenge suffife him, his displeasure was fo infinite, (and it may be, common reuenges he tooke before, as far as the whipcord would stretch, vpon like prouokements) wherefore he caused his men to take him, and bricke him vp in a narrowe chimney, that was neque major neque minor corpore locato: where he fed him for fifteene daies with bread and water through a hole, letting him sleepe standing if he would, for lye or fit he could not, and then he let him out to fee if he could learne to rule his tongue any better.

It is a disparagement to those that haue any true spark of Gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world fo to delight in detraeting, that they should keepe a venemous toothde Curre, and feede him with the crumbs that fall from his table, to do nothing but bite euery one by the shins that passe by. If they will needs be merrie, let them haue a foole, and not a knaue, to disport them, and seeke some other to bestow their almes on, than such an impudent begger.

As there be those that rayle at all men, fo there be them that rayle at all Arts, as Cornelius Agrippa, De vanitate scientiarum, and a Treatife that I haue
seene in dispraise of learning, where hee faith, it is
the corrupter of the simple, the schoolemafter of
sin, the storehouse of trecherie, the reuier of
vices, and mother of cowardize: alledging many
examples, how there was neuer man egregiously
euill but hee was a Scholler: that when the vfe
of letters was first inuented, the Golden World
ceased, Facinusque inuasit mortales: how studie
doeth effeminate a man, dimme his sight, weaken
his braine, and ingender a thousand disease.
Small learning would serue to confute so manifest
a scandale, and I imagine all men, like my selfe, so
vnmoveable / resolued of the excellencie thereof,
that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confuta-
tion, seme to giue the idle-witted aduerfary so
much encouragement, as he should furmize his
superficiall arguments had shaken the foundation
of it: against which he could neuer haue lifted
his pen if her selfe had not helpt him to hurt
herselfe.

With the enemies of Poetry, I care not if I haue
a bout, and those are they that tearme
our best Writers but babling Ballat-
makers, holding them fantafical fools
that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vse it. I
my selfe, haue beene so censured among some
dul-headed diuines: * who deeme it no * Absit arro-
gantia, that
more cunning to write an exquisite

An inuective
against the
enemies of
Poetrie.
should concern all divines, but such dunces as abridge men of their lawfull liberty & care not how unprepared they speake to their Auditory. Poem, than to preach pure Caluin, or distill the juice of a Commentary in a quarter Sermon. Prooue it when you will, you flowe spirited Saturnists, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne, to pollishe an exhortation withall: no eloquence but Tautologies, to tie the eares of your Auditory vnto you; no inuention but heere is to be noted, I stole this note out of Beza or Marlorat: no wit to moue, no passion to vrge, but onely an ordinary forme of preaching, blown vp by vse of often hearing and speaking; and you shall finde there goes more exquisite paines and puritie of wit, to the writing of one such rare Poem as Rosamond, than to a hundred of your dunsical Sermons.*

Should we (as you) borrow all out of others, and gather nothing of our selues, our names would be baffuld on euery Booke-sellers stall, and not a Chandlers Mustard-pot but would wipe his mouth with our waft paper. Newe Herrings, new, we must cry, every time we make our selues publique, or else we shall be chriftened with a hundred new titles of Idiotifme. Nor is Poetry an Art whereof there is no vse in a mans whole life, but to describe discontented thoughts and youthfull desires: for there is no study, but it dooth illustrate & beau-

* Such Sermons I meane as our secretaries preach in ditches, and other Commentaries, when they leape from the Cobblers stall to their pulpits.
tife. How admirably shine those Diuines aboue the common mediocritie, that haue tafted the sweet springs of Pernassus?

Silver-tongu'd Smith, whose well tun'd fstile hath made thy death the generall teares of the Muses, queintlie couldst thou deuife heavenly Ditties to Apollos Lute, & teach stately verse to trip it as smoothly as if Ouid & thou had but one soule. Hence along did it proceede, that thou wert such a plausible pulpit man: before thou entredst into the wonderfull waies of Theologie, thou refinedst, preparedst, and purifidest thy wings with sweete Poetrie. If a simple mans cenfur may be admitted to speake in such an open Theater of Opinions, I neuer saw abundant reading better mixt with delight, or sentences which no man can challenge of prophane affectatation, founding more melodious to the eare, or piercing more deepe to the heart.

To them that demaund, what fruistes the Poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they are able to prooue themselves necessarie to the sate? Thus I anfwer. First and fromost, they haue cleansed our language from barbarisme, and made the vulgar fорт, here in London, (which is the fountaine whose riuers flowe round about England) to aspire to a richer puritie of fpeech, than is communicated with the Comminalty of any
Nation under heaven. The virtuous by their praises they encourage to be more virtuous, to vicious men they are as infernal hags, to haunt their ghosts with eternall infamie after death. The Souldier, in hope to have his high deeds celebrated by their pens, despiseth a whole Armie of perills, and acteth wonders exceeding all humane conicecture. Those that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe. Plin. lib. 3. 

Multi famam, (faith one) pauci conscientiam verentur.

Let God see what he will, they would be loath to have the shame of the world. What age will not prayse immortal Sir Phillip Sidney, whome noble Salustius (that thrice singuler french Poet) hath famoused: together with Sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper, & merry Sir Thomas Moore, for the chiefe pillers of our engligh speech. Not so much but Chaucers host, Baly in Southwarke, and his wife of Bath, he keeps such a stirre with, in his Canterbury tales, shalbe talkt of whilst the Bath is vised, or there be euer a bad house in Southwarke.

Gentles, it is not your lay Chronigraphers that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great Frost, that can endowe your names with neuer dated glory: for they want the wings
of choife words to fly to heauen, which we haue: they cannot sweeten a discourse, or wrest admiration from men reading, as we can: reporting the meanest accident. Poetry is the honey of all flowers, the quintessence of all Sciences, the Marrowe of Witte, and the very Phrafe of Angels: how much better is it then to haue an eligant Lawier to plead ones caufe, than a fluttering Townsman, that loseth himselfe in his tale, and dooth nothing but make legs: so much is it better for a Nobleman, or Gentleman, to haue his honours story related, and his deedes emblazond, by a Poet than a Citizen.

Alas poor latinleff Authors, they are so simple, they knowe not what they doe; they no sooner spye a new Ballad, and his name to it that complide it: but they put him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the Masterleff men, that set vp their bills in Paules for services, and such as past vp their papers on euery poft, for Arithmetique and writing Schooles, scape eternitie amongst them; I beleue both they and the Knight Marshals men, that naile vp mandates at the court gat[e], for annoying the Pallace with filth or making water, if they set their names to the writing, will shortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous as the rest. For my part, I do
challenge no praise of learning to my selfe, yet haue I worn a gowne in the Vniuersitie, and so hath \textit{caret tempus non habet moribus}: but this I dare presume, that, if any \textit{Mecenas} binde mee to him by his bounty, or extend some round liberalitie to mee worth the speaking of, I will doe him as much honour as any Poet of my beardlesse yeeres shall in \textit{England}. Not that I am so confident what I can doe, but that I attribute so much to my thankfull mind aboue others, which I am persuaded would enable me to worke myraclles.

On the contrary side, if I bee euill intreated, or sent away / with a Flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will rayle on him soundly: not for an houre or a day, whiles the injury is fresh in my memory: but in some elaborate, pollisshed Poem, which I will leaua to the world when I am dead, to be a liuing Image to all ages, of his beggerly parsimony and ignoble illiberalitie: and let him not (what soeuer he be) measure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write \textit{Quicquid in buccam venerit}, as faft as my hand can trot: but I haue tearmes (if I be vexed) laid in steepe in \textit{Aqua fortis}, and Gunpowder, that shall rattle through the Skyes, and make an Earthquake in a pesants eares. Put cafe (since I am not yet out of the Theame of
Wrath) that some tired Jade belonging to the Press, whome I never wronged in my life; hath named me expressly in print (as I will not do him), and accused me of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiving, in an epiftle of mine, the reuerend memory of Sir Thomas Moore, Sir John Cheeke, Doctor Watson, Doctor Haddon, Doctor Carre, Maister Afcham, as if they were no meate but for his Masterships mouth, or none but some such, as the sonne of a ropemaker, were worthy to mention them. To shewe how I can rayle, thus would I begin to rayle on him. Thou that hadft thy hood turnd ouer thy eares, when thou wert a Batchelor, for abufing of Aristotle, and setting him vp on the Schoole gates, painted with Asses eares on his head: is it any difcredit for me, thou great baboune, thou Pigmie Braggart, thou Pampheter of nothing but peans, to bee cenfured by thee, that haft scorned the Prince of Philosophers; thou, that in thy Dialogues foldft Hunny for a halpenie, and the choyceft Writers ex-
[t]ant for cues a piece, that cam'ft to the Logicke Schooles when thou wert a Fresh-man, and writft phrases; off with thy gowne and vntrufe, for I meane to lath thee mightily. Thou haft a Brother, haft thou

N. II.
not, student in Almanackes? Go to, Ile stand to it, he father'd one of thy bastards, (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was set forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am sure you haue heard of a ridiculous Affe, / that many yeares since fold lyes by the great, & wrote an absurd astrologicall Discourse of the terrible Coniunctio of Saturne and Jupiter, wherein (as if hee had latelie caft the Heauens water, or beene at the anatomizing of the Skies intrailes in Surgeons hall) hee prophecieth of such strange wonders to ensue from stars diatemperance, & the vniversal adultry of Planets, as none but he, that is Bawd to those celestiall bodies, could euer discry. What expectation there was of it both in towne & country, the amazement of those times may testifie: and the rather, because hee pawned his credit vpon it, in these expresse tearmes: If these things fall not out in every poynst as I haue wrote, let mee for euer hereafter loose the credit of my Astronomie. Well, so it happend, that hee happend not to be a man of his word: his Astronomie broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne and Jupiter prou'd honefter men than all the World tooke them for: wherevpon, the poore Prognosticator was ready to runne himselfe through with his Jacob's Staffe,
caft himself headlong from the top of a Globe, (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. The whole Vniuerstie hyft at him, Tarlton at the Theator made iefts of him, and Elderton con-
fumed his ale-crammed nose to nothing, in bear-
baying him with whole bundels of ballets. Would you, in likely reason, geffe it were possible for anie 
shame-fwolne toad to haue the spat-proofe face to 
out liue this disgrace? It is, deare brethren, Vivit, 
imo vivit; and which is more, he is a Vicar.

Poor Slaue, I pitie thee that thou hadst no more 
grace but to come in my way. Why, could not 
you haue fate quyet at home, and writ Catechismes, 
but you must be comparing me to Martin? and 
exclayme against me for reckoning vp the high 
Schollers of worthie memorie? Jupiter 
ingeniis praebet sua numina vatum, faith Ouid; Seque cele-
brari quolibet ore finit. Which, if it be so, I hope 
I am Aliquis, & those men, quos honoris causa 
nominavi, are not greater than Gods. Methinks, 
I see thee stand quivering & quaking, and euen 
now lift vp thy hands to heauen, as thanking God 
my choler/is somewhat affwag'd: but thou art 
deceiued, for howeuer I let fall my ftile a little, 
to talk in reason with thee that haft none, I do 
not meane to let thee scape fo.

Thou haft wronged one for my fake, (whome 
for the name I muft loue) T. N., the Maifter
Butler of Pembrooke Hall, a farre better Scholler than thy selfe, (in my judgement) and one that sheweth more discretion and government in setting vp a sife of Bread, than thou in all thy whole booke. Why man, thinke no scorne of him, for he hath held thee vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee correction, and thou hast capd and kneed him (when thou wert hungry) for a chipping. But thats nothing, for hadst thou neuer beene beholding to him, nor holden vp by him, he hath a Beard that is a better Gentlemæ than all thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like Cato, able to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke sternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy Sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, and entreated my patience to bee good to thee whilst I read it: but for al that I could doe with myselfe, (as I am sure I may doe as much as an other man) I could not refraine, but bequeath it to the Priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was so vgly, dorbellicall, and lamish. Monstrous, monstrous, and palpable, not to be spoken of in a Christian Congregation: thou haft skumd ouer the Schoole men, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of diuinitie Brewesse, which the dogges will not eate. If the Printer haue any great dealings with thee, he were beft get a priuledge betimes, *Ad imprimendû solum*, forbidding all
other to fell waste paper but himselfe, or else he will be in a wofull taking. The Lambe of God make thee a wiser Bell-weather then thou art, for else I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leaue all, and fall to thy fathers occupation, which is, to goe and make a rope to hang thy selfe. Neque enim Lex aquior ulla est, quam necis artifices arte perire sua: and so I leaue thee til a better opportunity, to be tormented world without end, of our Poets and Writers about London, whome thou haft called piperly Make-plaies/and Make-bates: not doubting but he also whom thou tearmest the vayn Pap-hatchet, wil haue a flurt at thee one day: all ioynly driuing thee to this issue, that thou shalt bee constrained to goe to the chiefe Beame of thy Benefice, and there beginning a lametabile speech with cur scripsi, cur peri, end with pravum prava decent, juvat inconcessa voluptas, and with a trice trufe vp thy life in the string of thy Sancebell. So be it, pray Penn, Incke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not be troubled with thee any more.

Redeo ad vos, mei Auditores, haue I not a in-different pretty veine in spurgalling an Asse? if you knew how extemporall it were at this instant, and with what haft it is writ, you would say so. But I would not haue you thinke, that al this that is set downe heere, is in good earneft, for then you
goe by S. Gyles, the wrong way to Westminster: but onely to shew how for a neede I could rayle, if I were thoroughly fyred. So ho, Honiger Hammon: where are you al thys while, I cannot be acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the case? am I subiect to the sinne of Wrath I write against, or no, in whetting my penne on this block? I know you would faine haue it so, but it shal not choose but be otherwife for this once. Come on: let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttony can say for her selfe, for Wrath hath fpet his poyson, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

The Romayne Emperours that succeeded Augustus were exceedingly giuen to this horrible vice, whereof some of them would feede on nothing but the tongues of Phefants and Nightingales: other, would spend as much at one banquet, as a Kings revenues came too in a yeare: whose excesse I would decypher at large, but that a new Laureat hath fau’d me the labor: who, for a man that stands vpon paines & not wit, hath perfromd as much, as anie Storie dresser may doo, that sets a new English nap on an olde Latine Apotheqs. It is enough for me to licke dishes here at home, though I feede not mine eyes at anie of the Ro/mane feafts. Much good doo it you, Master Dines, here in
London: for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. Miserere mei, what a fat churle it is? Why, he hath a belly as big as the round Church in Cambridge, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a base viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in either of them. Experto crede Roberto, there is no maft like a Marchaunts table. Bonâ fide, it is a great mifture, that we haue not men swine as well as beasts, for then we should haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a fide of bacon that you might lay vnder your head in stead of a bolster.

It is not for nothing that other Countries, whome wee vpbraid with Drunkenneffe, call vs burften-bellied Gluttons: for we make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beeefe, and eate more meat at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a month. Good thriftie men, they drawe out a dinner with fallets, like a Swart-rutters fute, and make Madona Nature their beft Caterer. We muft haue our Tables furniht like Poultrers ftalls, or as though we were to viéttuall Noahs Arke againe, (wherein there was al forts of liuing creatures that euer were) or els the good-wife wil not open her mouth to bid one welcome. A stranger that should come to one of our Magnificoes houfes, when dinner were fet on
the boord, and he not yet set, would think the
goodman of the house were a Haberdasher of
Wilde-fowle, or a Merchant venturer of daintie
meate, that sells commodities of good cheere by
the great, and hath Factors in Arabia, Turkey,
Egipt, and Barbarie, to provide him of strange
Birdes, China mustard, and odde patterns to make
Custards by.

Lord, what a coyle haue we, with this Course
and that Course, remoouing this dish higher, setting
another lower, and taking away the third. A
Generall might in lesse space remoue his Camp,
than they stand disposing of their Gluttonie. And
whereto tends all this gurmandise, but to giue
sleepe grosse humors to feede on, to corrupt the
braine, and make it vnapt and vnweldie for anie
thing?

The / Romane Censors, if they lighted vpon a
fat corpulent man, they straight tooke away his
horse, and constrained him to goe a foote: positiuely concluding his carkasse was so puffed vp with
gluttony or idlenesse. If wee had such horese-
takers amongst vs, and that surfeit-swelne Churles,
who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might bee
constrained to carry their flesh budgets from place
to place on foote, the price of veluet and cloath
would fall with their bellies, and the gentle craft
(alias the red herrings kinsmen) get more, &
drinke leffe. *Plenus venter nil agit libenter, & plures gula occidit quam gladius.* It is as desperate a peece of seruice to sleep vpon a full stomacke, as it is to ferue in face of the bullet: a man is but his breath, and that may as wel be ftopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, as running on the mouth of the Cannon. That is verified of vs, which *Horace* writes of an outrageous eater in his time, *Quicquid quæserat ventri donabat avaro*, Whatsoever he could rap or rend, he consficated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are such flesh-eating Saracens, that chaff fish may not content vs, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pullerie, and quartering of calues and oxen. It is horrible and deteftable, no godly Fishmonger that can digest it. Report (which our moderners clepe flundring Fame) puts mee in memorye of a notable icft I heard long agoe of Doctor *Watson*, verie conducible to the reproofe of these fleshly-minded Belials. He being at supper, on a fafting or fish night at leaft, with a great number of his freinds and acquaintance, there chaunced to be in the company an outlandish doctor, who, when all other fell to such victuals (agreeing to the time) as were before them, he ouerflipt them; and there being one ioynt of flesh on the table for such as
had meate stomackes, fell freshely to it. After that hunger (halfe conquered) had restored him to the vfe of his speach, for his excuse he said to his friend that brought him thether, *Profe†o, Domine, ego sum malissimus piscator*, meaning by *piscator*, a Fishman: (which is a libertie, as also *malissimus*, that out-landifh men in their familliar talke doo challenge, at leaft vfe, aboue / vs). *At tu es bonissimus carnifex*, quoth Doctor *Watson*, retorting very merrily his owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs it may be said, we are *Malissimi piscatores*, but *bonissimi carnifices*. I would English the iest, for the edification of the temporaltie, but that it is not so good in English as in Latine: and though it were as good, it would not convert clubs and clowted shoone from the flesh-pots of *Egipt*, to the Prouant of the Lowe countreyes: they had rather (with the Seruing-man) put vp a suppli- cation to the Parliament house, that they might haue a yard of pudding for a penie, than desire (with the Baker) there might bee three ounces of bread sold for a halfe penie.

*Alphonso, King Philips Confessor*, that came ouer with him to *England*, was such a moderate man in his dyet, that he would feede but once a day, and at that tyme hee would feed so slenderly and sparingly, as scarfle serued to keep life and soule together.
One night, importunately inuited to a solemnne banquet, for fashion sake he fate downe among the rest, but by no entreatie could be drawn to eat any thing: at length, frute being set on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the dish, and put it in his pocket, which one marking, that fate right ouer against him, askt him, *Domine, cur es folicitus in crafinum?* Sir, *why are you careful for the morrow?* Whereeto he answer'd most soberly, *Imo hoc facio, mi amice, ut ne sim folicitus in crafinum.*

No, *I do it, my frind, that I may not be careful for the morrow:* as though his appetite were a whole day contented with so little as an apple, and that it were enough to pay the morrowes tribute to Nature.

Rare, and worthie to be registred to all posterities, is the Countie Molines (sometime the Prince of Parmaes companion) altered course of life, who being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was possible for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his heart could desire. Vpon a day entering into a deepe melancholy by himselfe, hee fell into a discoursifie consideration what this world was, how vaine and transtorie the pleasures/thereof, and how many times he had offended God by sur- fettning, gluttony, drunkennes, pride, whoredome,
& such like, and how hard it was for him, that liu'd in that prosperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with those pleasures: whereupon he presently resolu'd, twixt God and his owne conscience, to forfake it and al his allurements, and betake him to his seuerest forme of life vsed in their state. And with that cald all his Souldiers and acquaintance together, and, making knownen his intent vnto them, he distributed his liuing and possessiions (which were infinite) amongst the poorest of them: and hauing not left himselfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the moft beggerlie new erected Order of the Fryer Capuchines. Their Institution is, that they shal possessie nothing whatsoeuer of their owne, more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to go bare foote, weare haire shirts, and lie vpon the hard bords, winter & summer time: they must haue no meat, nor ask any but what is giuen the voluntarily, nor must they lay vp from any meale to meale, but giue it to y poore, or els it is a great penaltie. In this seueru humilitie liues this devout Countie, and hath done this foure yeare, submitting himselfe to al the base drudgery of the house, as fetching water, making cleane the rest of their chambers, insomuch as he is the Junior of the Order. O what a notable rebuke were his honourable Lowlines to succeeding pride, if this
prostrate spirit of his were not the seruant of Superstition: or hee misspent not his good workes on a wrong Faith.

Let but our English belly-gods punish their pursie bodies with this strict penance, and pro-
fee the Capuchiniſme but one month, and Ie be their pledge, they shall not grow so like dry-fats as they doo. O it will make them iolly long-winded, to trot vp and downe the Dorter ſtaires, and the water-tankard will keepe under the insurrection of their shoulders, the haire ſhirt will chafe whordome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards, take their ſlesh downe a button hole lower.

But /if they might be induced to diſtribute all their goods amongſt the poore, it were to be hoped Saint Peter would let them dwell in the suburbes of heauen, whereas, otherwise, they muſt keepe aloofe at Pancredge, and not come neere the liberties by five leagues and aboue. It is your dooing (Diotrepheſ Diuell) that these ſtal-fed cor-
morants to damnation, muſt bung vp all the welth of the Land in their ſnap-haunce bags, and poore Schollers and Souldiers wander in backe lanes, and the out-shiftes of the Citie, with neuer a rag to their backes: but our truſt is, that by some intemperance or other, you will tourne vp their heeles one of these yeares together, and pro vide them of
such vnthrifts to their heires, as shall spend in one weeke amongst good fellowes what they got by extortion and oppression from Gentlemen all their life-time.

From Gluttonie in meates, let me descend to superfluitie in drink: a sinne, that euer since we haue mixt our felues with the Low-countries, is counted honourable: but before we knew their licing warres, was held in the highest degree of hatred that might be. Then, if wee had seene a man goe wallowing in the streeteres, or line sleeping under the boord, we would haue spat at him as a toade, and cald him foule drunken swine, and warnd all our friends out of his company: now, he is no body that cannot drinke super nagulum, carouse the Hunters hoop, quaffe vp ley freze crose, with leapes gloues, mumpes, fro[l]ickes, and a thousand such dominiering inuentions. He is reputed a pesaunt and a boore that will not take his licour profoundly. And you shall hear a Cauailer of the firft feather, a princococks that was but a Page the other day in the Court, and now is all to be frenchified in his Souldiers fute, stand upon termes with God's wounds, you dishonour me fir, you do me the dis-grace if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke
to you: and, in the midst of his cups, stand vaunting his manhood, beginning every sentence, with when I first bore Armes, when he neuer bare any thing but his Lords rapier after him in his life. If he haue beene ouer, and visited a towne of Garrison, as a travaailer or passenger, he hath as great experience as the greatest Commander and chiefe Leader in England. A mightie deformer of mens manners and features, is this vnnecessary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with neuer so many vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as nature can bestow vpon a man: yet if he be thirstie after his owne destruction, and hath no joy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection wil utterly obscure all that is commendable in him: and all his good qualities sink like lead downe to the bottome of his carroweing cups, where they will lie, like sees and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

Clim of the clough, thou that vseth to drinke nothing but scalding lead and sulphir in hell, thou art not so greedie of thy night geare. O, but thou hast a foule swallow, if it come once to carousing of humane bloud: but thats but seldome once in seauen yeare, when theres a great execution, otherwise thou art tide at rack and manger, and drinkst nothing but the Aqua vitae of vengeance all thy
life time. The Proverbe giues it foorth, thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art some manner of a good fellowe: let mee intreate thee (since thou haft other iniquidies inough to circumuuent vs withall) to wipe this sinne out of the catalogue of thy subtiltie: helpe to blast the Vines, that they may beare no more grapes, and sowe the wines in the cellars of Marchants storehouses, that our Countreymen may not pisse out all their wit and thrift againft the walles. King Edgar, because his subiects should not offend in swilling, & bibbing, as they did, caused certaine iron cups to be chained to euery fontaine and wells side, and at euery Vintners doore, with iron pins in them, to fint euery man how much he shoulde drinke: and he that went beyond one of those pins forfeited a penny for euery draught. And, if Stories were well searcht, I beleeeue hoopes in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that euery man should take his hoope, and no more. I haue heard it iustified for a trueth by great Personages, that the olde Marquesse of Pifana (who yet liues) drinkes not once in seauen yeare: and I haue read of one Andron of Argos, that was so sildome thirsty, that he trauailel ouer the hot burning sands of Lybia, & neuer dranke. Then, why shoulde our colde Clime bring
foorth such fierie throates? Are we more thirstie than Spaine and Italy, where the Sunnes force is doubled? The Germaines and lowe Dutch, me thinkes, should bee continually kept moyft with the foggie aire and flinking miftes that rise out of their fennie foyle: but as their Countrey is ouerflowen with water, so are their heads alwaies ouerflowen with wine, and in their bellies they haue standing quag-mires & bogs of English beere.

One of their breedde it was that wrat the Booke, _De Arte bibendi_, a worshipfull treatise, fitte for none but Silenus and his Asse to set forth: besides that volume, we haue generall rules and injunctions, as good as printed precepts, or Statutes set downe by Acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard; as still to keepe your first man, not to lave any flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glasse on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue some shooing horne to pull on your wine, as a rasher of the coles, or a redde herring, to stirre it about with a candles ende to make it taste better, and not to holde your peace whiles the pot is stirring.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely, but eight kindes. The first is Ape drunke, and he leapes, and sings, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens: the second is Lion drunke, and he flings the pots
about the house, calls his Hostesse whore, breaks the glasse windowes with his dagger, and is apt to quarrell with any man that speaks to him: the third is Swine drunke; heavy, lumpish, and sleepe, and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more cloathes: the fourth is Sheepe drunke, wise in his own conceipt, when he cannot bring foorth a right word: the fifth is Mawdlen drunke; when a fellow wil weepe for kindnes in the midst of his Ale, and kiss thee, saying, By God, Captaine, I loue thee: goe thy waies, thou dost not thinke so often of me as I do of thee, I would (if it pleased God) I could not loue thee so well as I doo: and then he puts his finger in his eie, and cries: the fixt is Martin drunke, when a man is drunke, and drinkes him-selfe sober ere he stirre: the seuenth is Goate drunke, when, in his drunkennes, he hath no minde but on Lecherie: the eighth is Fox drunke, when he is craftie drunke, as manie of the Dutch-men bee, [that] will neuer bargaine but when they are drunke. All these species, and more, haue I seen practisf in one Companie at one fitting, when I haue been permitted to remaine sober amongst them, onely to note their seuerall humors. Hee that plies any one of them harde, it will make him to write admirable verses, and to haue a deepe casting heade, though hee were neuer so very a Dunce before.
Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your braines twice sodden, or your flesh rotten with the Dropsie, that loue not to goe in greasie dublets, stockings out at the heele, and weare ale-house daggers at your backes, forsware this flauering brauey, that will make you haue stinking breathes, and your bodies smell like Brewers' aprons: rather keepe a snuffe in the bottome of the glasse to light you to bed withall, than leaue neuer an eye in your head to lead you ouer the threshold. It will bring you, in your olde age, to be companions with none but Porters and Car-men, to talke out of a Cage, rayling as dronken men are wont, a hundred boyes wondering about them; and to dye sodainly, as Fol Long, the Fencer, did, drinking Aqua vitae. From which (as all the rest) good Lord deliuer Pierce Penilesse.

The nurfe of this enormitie (as of all euills) is Idlenes, or sloth, which, hauing no pain-ful Prouidence to set him selfe a worke, runnes headlong, with the raines in his own hand, into all lasciviousnesse and senfualitie that may bee. Men, when they are idle, and know not what to do, faith one, Let vs goe to the Stilliard, and drinke Rhenish wine. Nay, if a man knew where a good whorhouse wer, faith another, it were somwhat like. Nay, faith the third, let vs go to a dicing house or
a bowling alley, and there we shall haue some sport for our money. To one of these three (at hand, quoth pick-purse) your euil Angelfhip, maister mani-headed beast, conducts them, _Vbi quid agit tur_ —betwixt you and their soules be it, for I am no Drawer, Box-keeper, or Pander, to bee priuie to their sports. If I were to paint Sloth, (as I am not fene in the sweetenings) by Saint _Ioh_n the Euangelift, I sweare I would draw it like a Stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who if a man come to his stall and ask him for a booke, never stirs his head, or looks vpon him, but stands stone still, and speakes not a word: only with his little finger points backwards to his boy, who must be his interpreter, and so al the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he fits without motion, except at such times as he goes to dinner or supper: for then he is as quicke as other three, eating fixe times every day. If I would raunge abroad, and looke in at fluggards key-holes, I should finde a number lying a bed to faue charges of ordinaries, & in winter, when they want firing, losing halfe a weeks Commons together, to keepe them warme in the linnen. And hold you content, this Summer an under-meale of an afternoone long doth not amisse to exercife the eies withall. Fat men and Farmers sonnes, that sweate much with eating
harde cheefe, and drinking olde wine, must haue some more eafe than yong boyes, that take their pleasure all day running vp and downe.

Setting iefting aside, I hold it a great disputable question, which is a more euil man, of him that is an idle glutton at home, or a retchleſſe vnthrift abroad? The glotton at home doth nothing but engender diseases, pamper his fleſh vnto luſt, and is good for none but his owne gut: the vnthrift abroad exer-cifeth his bodie at dauncing schoole, fence schoole, tennis, and all such recreations: the vintners, the viſtuallers, the dicing-houses, and who not, get by him. Suppose he loſe a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit: and how fhould a man know to eschue vices, if his owne experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences? *Omne ignotum pro magnifico est:* that villainie we haue made no aſſayes in, we admyre. Besides, my vagrant Reueller haunts Playes, and ſharpenſ his wits with frequenting the company of Poets: he emboldens his bluſhing face by courting faire women on the fodaine, and lookeſ into all Eftates by converſing with them in publike places. Nowe tell me whether of these two, the heaſy headed gluttonous houſe doue, or this liuely, wanton, young Gallant, is like to prooue the wiſer man, and better member in the Common wealth? If
my youth might not be thought partiall, the fine
qualified Gentleman, although vnftaid, should carie
it clean away from the lazie clownish droane.

Sloth in Nobilitie, Courtiers, Schollers, or any
men, is the chiefeft caufe that brings
them in contempt. For, as induftric
and vnfatigable toyle raifeth meane perfons from
obfcure houfes to high thrones of authoritie: fo
Sloath, and sluggifh security, caufeth proud Lordes
to tumble from the towers of theirftarly difcents,
and bee trod vnnder foote of euery inferior Beftonian.
Is it the lofty treading of a Galliard, or fine grace
in telling of a loue tale amongft Ladies, can make
a man reuerenft of the multitude? no, they care
not for the falsf glistering of gay garments, or
insinuating curtefie of a carpet Peere; but they
delight to fee him shine in Armour, and oppofe
himfelfe to honourable daunger, to participate a
voluntarie penie with his fouldiers, and relieve part
of their wante out of his owne purfe. That is the
courfe he that will be popular muft take, which, if
he negleé, and fit dallying at home, nor will be
awakte by any indignities out of his loue-dreame,
but suffer every vpftar groome to defe him, set
him at naught, and shake him by the beard vn-
reuenge, let him ftraight take orders, and bee a
Church-man, and then his patience may passe for a
vertue: but otherwise, to be suspected of cowardife,
and not car'd for of any. The onely enemie to Sloth, is contention and emulation; as the means to annoyde Slouth.

to propose one man to my selfe, that is the onely myrrour of our Age, and strive to outgoe him in vertue. But this strife must be so tempered, that we fall not from the eagerness of prayse, to the enuying of their persons: for, then, we leave running to the goal of glory, to spurne at a stone that lies in our way; and so did Atlante, in the middest of her course stoop to take vp the golden apple by her enemie scattered in her way, and was out-runne by Hippomenes. The contrary to this contention, & emulation, is securitie, peace, quiet, tranquilitie: when we haue no aduerfary to prie into our actions, no malicious eye, whose pursuing our priuate behauiour, might make vs more vigilant over our imperfections, than otherwise we would be.

That State or Kingdome that is in league with all the World, and hath no forraine sword to vexe it, is not half so strong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues every houre in feare of inuasion. There is a certaine waste of the people for whom there is no use, but warre: and these men must haue some employment still to cut them off. 

Nam si foras hostem non habent, domi inventient. If they haue no servise abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affayres of the State be such, as
cannot exhale all these corrupt excrements, it is very expedient they have some light toyes to busie their heads withall, to cast before them as bones to gnaw upon, which may keepe them from having leasure to intermeddle with higher matters.

To this effect, the policye of Playes is verie necessary, howsoever some shallow-braind censurers (not the deepest searchers into the secrets of government) mightily oppugne them. For whereas the after-noone being the idleft time of the day; wherein men that are their owne masters, (as Gentlemen of the Court, the Innes of the Court, and the number of Captaines and Souldiers about London) doo wholly bestow themselves upon pleasure, and that pleasure they deuide (how vertuously it skillles not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or seeing a Play: is it not / then better (since of foure extremes all the world cannot keepe them but they will choose one) that they should betake them to the leaft, which is Playes? Nay, what if I prooue Playes to be no extreame; but a rare exercife of vertue? First, for the subject of them (for the most part) it is borrowed out of our English Chronicles, wherein our forefathers valiant acts (that have lien long buried in rustie bras and worme-eaten bookes) are reviued, and they themselves rayfed from the Graue of Oblition, and brought to pleade their
aged Honours in open presence: than which, what can be a sharper reproofe to these degenerate effeminate dayes of ours?

How would it haue ioyed braue Talbot (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had lyen two hundred yeare in his Toomb, he should triumph againe on the Stage, and haue his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at leaft, (at feuerall times) who, in the Tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding.

I will defend it against anie Collian, or clubfifted Vfurer of them all, there is no immortalitie can be gien a man on earth like vnto Playes. What talke I to them of immortalitie, that are the onely vnderminers of Honour, & doe enuie any man that is not sprung vp by base Brokerie like them-selves. They care not if all the auncient Houfes were rooted out, fo that, like the Burgomafters of the Low countries, they might share the gouernment amongst them as States, & be quarter-mafters of our Monarchie. Al Arts to them are vanitie: and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue Henry the fifth represented on the Stage, leading the French King prisoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin to sweare fealty. I, but (will they say) what doo we get by it? respecting neither the right of Fame that is due to true
Nobilitie deceased, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be proposed to aduentrous mindes, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable lucre, & filthy vnquenchable avarice.

They know when they are dead they shall not be brought vpon the Stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the Vsurer and the Diuel, or buying Armes of the Herald, who giues them the Lyon, without tongue tayle or tallents, because his master whom he muft serue is a Townesman, and a man of peace, and muft not keepe any quarrelling beasts to annoy his honest neighbours.

In Playes, all coosonages, all cunning drifts ouergylded with outward holinesse, all stratagems of warre, all the canker-wormes that breede on the ruft of peace, are most liuely anatomiz'd: they shew the ill succeffe of treason, the fall of hafty climbers, the wretched ende of vsurpers, the miserie of ciuil disstention, and how iuft God is euermore in punishing of murther. And to prooue euery one of these allegations, could I propound the circumstances of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this Theame other wise than obiter. What shoul I say more? they are fower pills of reprehension, wrapt vp in sweete words. Whereas some Petitioners to the Counfaile against them obiec't, they corrupt the youth of
the Citie, and withdrawe Prentifes from their worke; they heartely wish they might be troubled with none of their youth nor their prentifes; for some of them (I meane the ruder handi-craftes seruaunts) neuer come abroad, but they are in danger of vndoing: and as for corrupting them when they come, thats false; for no Play they haue, encourageth any man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before such the halter and the gallowes; or prayseth or approoueth pride, luft, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunkennes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of Trades and Traders of the Citie by them, that is an Article soyled in by the vintners, ale-wiues, and victuallers, who furmise, if there were no Playes, they shoule haue all the companie that refort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houses euery after-noone. Nor so, nor so, good brother bottle-ale, for there are other places besides where money can bestow it self: the signe of the smocke will wype your mouth clean: and yet I haue heard ye haue made her a tenant to your tap-houses. But what shal he doe that hath spent himselfe? where shal he haunt? Faith, when dice, luft, and drunkennes, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there bee neuer a Play for him to goe to for his penie, he fits melancholie in his chamber, deuising vpon felonie or treason,
and howe hee may beft exalt himfelfe by mischief

In *Augustus* time (who was the Patron of all witty sports) there happened a great Fray in *Rome* about a Plaier, infomuch as all the Citie was in an vprore: whereupon the Emperour (after the broyle was somewhat ouer-blown) cald the Player before him, and afkt what was the reason that a man of his qualitie durft presume to make fuch a brawle about nothing. He smilingly replyde, *It is good for thee O Cæfar, that the peoples heads are troubled with brawles and quarrels about vs and our light matters: for otherwife they would looke into thee and thy matters. Read Lipfius or any prophane or Chriftian Politician, and you shal finde him of this opinion.*

Our Players are not as the players beyond sea, a fort of fquirting baudie Comedians, that haue whores and common Curtizans to play womens parts, and forbeare no immodest speech or vnchaft action that may procure laughter; but our Scene is more ftately furnisht than euer it was in the time of *Rofcius*, our reprefentations honorable, and full of gallant resolution, not confifting, like theirs, of a Pantaloun, a Whore, and a Zanie, but of Emperours, Kings, and Princes: whose true Tragedies (*Sophocleo cothurno*) they doo vaunt.
Not Roscius nor Æsop, those Tragedians ad-
myred before Christ was borne, could ever performe more in action than The due
famous Ned Allen. I must accuse our Poets of sloth and partialtie, that they will not boast in large impressions what worthy men (above all Nations) England affoords. Other Countries cannot have a Fidler breake a string but they will put it in print, and the olde Romanes in the writings they published, thought scorne to vie any but domestical examples of their owne home-bred Actors, Schollers, and Champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth Generation: Coblers, Tinkers, Fencers, none escapt them, but they mingled them all on one Gallimafrey of glory.

Heere I haue vsed a like Methode, not of tying my selfe to mine owne Countrey, but by infifting in the experience of our time: and, if I euer write any thing in Latine, (as I hope one day I shal) not a man of any desert here amongst vs, but I will haue vp. Tarlton, Ned Allen, Knell, Bentlie, shal be made knowne to France, Spaine, and Italie: and not a part that they surmounted in, more than other, but I will there note and set downe, with the manner of their habites and attyre.

The child of Sloth is Lecherie, which I haue plac't laft in my order of handling: a sinne that
PIERCÉ PENILESSE.

is able to make a man wicked that should describe it; for it hath more starting-holes than a five hath holes, more Clyents than Westminster-hall, more diseases than Newgate. Call a Leete at Byshopgate, & examine how every second house in S[th]orditch is mayntayned: make a priuie search in Southwarke, and tell mee how many Shee-Inmates you finde: nay, goe where you will in the Suburbes, and bring me two Virgins that haue vowd Chastity, and Ile builde a Nunnery.

Westminster, Westminster, much maydenhead haft thou to answere for at the day of Judgement. Thou hadst a Sanctuary in thee once, but haft few Saints left in thee now. Surgeons and Apothecaries, you know what I speake is true; for you liue (like Sumners) vpon the finnes of the people; tell me is there any place so lewde as this Ladie London? Not a Wench sooner creepes out of the hell, but she is of the Religion. Some wiues will sowe Mandrake in their gardens, and crosse-neighbourhoode with them is counted good-fellowship.

The Court I dare not touch, but surely there (as in the Heauens) bee many falling starres, and but one true Diana. Consequentia peccandi tollit senfum peccati. Custome is a Lawe, and / Lust holds it for a Lawe, to liue without Lawe. LAIS, that had
so many Poets to her Louers, could not allwayes prefferue her beauty with their prayles. Marble will weare away with much raine: Gold wil rust with moyst keeping: & the ritcheft garments are subiect to Times Moath-frets; Clitemneftra, that flew her husband to enioye the Adulturer Ægisbus, and bathde herselfe in Milke every day to make her young agayne, had a time when shee was ashamed to viewe herselfe in a looking glasse, and her body withered, her minde being greene. The people poyned at her for a murtherer, young children howted at her as a trumpet: shame, misery, sicknesse, beggery, is the best end of vnclannesse.

Lais, Cleopatra, Helen, if our Clyme had any such, noble Lord warden of the Wenches & Anglers, I commend them with the rest of our vnclane sisters in Shorditch, the Spittle, Southwarke, Westminster, and Turnbull streete, to the protection of your Portership: hoping you will speedily carrie them to hell, there to keepe open house for all young diuels that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated with theyr fixpenie damnation any longer.

Your Diuelships
bounden executor,
Pierce Penileffe.
A /Supplication calit thou this? (quoth the Knight of the poft) it is the maddest Supplication that euere I sawe; me thinkes thou hast handled all the seven deadly sinnes in it, and spared none that exceedes his limites in any of them. It is wel done to praditife thy witte, but (I beleeeue) our Lord will cun thee little thanke for it.

The worse for me (quoth I), if my destinie be such, to lose my labour every where, but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Wel, haft thou any more that thou wouldest haue me to doo? (quoth hee) Onely one fute, (quoth I) which is this, that fith opportunitie fo conueniently serves, you would acquaint me with the state of your infernal regiment: and what that hel is, where your Lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doo inhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their Countrie, enuie that any shall bee more happy than they: and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that Wit or Arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselues: or, whether it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men see meat, but can get none, or are euery thristie, and ready to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to taft the coole streames that runne hard at their feete: where (permutata vicissitudine) one Ghost
torments an other by turnes, and hee that al his life time was a great fornicator, hath all the diseases of lust continually hanging vpon him, and is con-
strayned (the more to augment his misery) to haue congrefſe euery howre with hagges and olde witches: and he that was a great drunkard heere on earth, hath his penence affignde him, to carouſe himſelſe drunke with dishwaſh and Vineger, and surfet foure times a day with fower Ale and small Beere: as fo of the rest, as the vsuer to ſwallow moulten golde, the glutton to eate nothing but toades, and the Murtherer too be ſtil ſtabd with daggers, but neuer die: or whether (as some phantaſtical refyners of philosophie will needes perſwade vs) hell is no-
thing but error, and that none but fooles and Idiotes and Mechani/call men, that haue no learn-
ing, ſhall be damnd: of these doubts if you will refolue me, I ſhall thinke my self to haue profited greatly by your companie.

He hearing me ſo inquifitiue in matters aboue humane capacitie, entertained my greedie humor with this anſwere. Poets and Philosophers, that take a pride in inuenting new opinions, haue foughſt to ſeoume their wits by hunting after strange conceits of heauen and hell; all generally agreeing, that ſuch places there are, but how in-
habited, by whom gouerned, or what betides them that are transported to the one or other, not two of
them iumpe in one tale. We, that to our terror and grieve doe knowe their dotage by our sufferings, reioyce to thinke how these fillie flyes play with the fire that muft burne them.

But leauing them to the Laborynth of their fond curiositie, shall I tell thee in a word what Hell is? It is a place where ɔ̃ soules of vntemperate men, & ill liuers of al sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall Resurrection, kept and posseed chiefly by spirites, who lye like Soulciours in Garrison, readie to be sentt about any seruice into the world, whensoever Lucifer, their Lieftenaunt Generall, pleafeth. For the fciutation of it, in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to Callis and Douer: for, as a man standing vpon Callis Sands may see men walking on Douer Clyffes, fo easily may you discerne Heauen from the fartheft part of hell, and behold the melodie and motions of the Angels and Spirits there resident, in fuch perfect manner, as if you were amongft them; which, how it worketh in the mindes and foules of them that haue no power to apprehend fuch felicitie, it is not for me to intimate, because it is prejudiciall to our Monarchie.

I would bee forrie (quoth I) to importune you in any matter of secrecie: yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would
fatisifie me in full fort, and according to truth, what the Diuell is whom you serue? as also how he began, and how farre his power and authoritie extends?

Perfte, beleeue me, thou shriveft me very neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art aware of: yet in hope thou wilt conceale what I tell thee, I wil lay open our whole estate plainly and simply vnto thee as it is: but first I will begin with the opinions of former times, & so haften forward to that manifeste verum that thou seekest. Some men there be that, building too much vpon reason, perfwade themselues that there are no Diuells at all, but that this word Daemon is such another morall of mishiefse, as the Poets Dame Fortune is of mishap: for as vnder the fiction of this blinde Goddesse we ayme at the folly of Princes and great men in disposing of honors, that oftentimes preferre fooles and disgrace wise men, and alter their favours in turning of an eye, as Fortune turns her wheele: so vnder the person of this olde Gnathonicall companion, called the Diuell, we throwd all subtiltie, masking vnder the name of simplicitie, all painted holines devouring widowes houses, all gray-headed Foxes clad in sheepes garments; so that the Diuell (as they make it) is onely a pestilent humour in a man,
of pleasure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monstrous hypocrisie: vnder vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine Arts and studies whatsoeuer, but also dishonorable prodigality, vntemperate venerie, and that hateful sinne of selfe-loue, which is so common among vs: vnder villany I comprehend murder, treason, theft, coufnage, cut-throat couetise, and such like: lastly, vnder hypocrisie, al Machiauiliisme, puritanisme, & outward gloasing with a mans enemie, and protesting friendship to him I hate, and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with Common-wealth pretences: and, finally, all Italionate conueyances, as to kill a man, and then mourne for him, quasi vero it was not by my consent, to be a slaue to him that hath injur'd me, and kisfe his feete for opportunities of reuenge, to be seuer in punishing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of such meanes but myselfe, to vs men for my purpose & then caft them off, to seeke his destruction that knowes my secrets: and such as I haue imploied in any murther or stratagem, to set them priuilie together by the eares, to stab each other mutually, for fear of bewraying me: or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in such course as may bring them both to the gallowes. These, and a thousand more such sleights, hath hypocrisie learned by travauling strange
PIERCE PENILESSE.

Countries. I will not say she puts them in practice here in England, although there be as many false brethren & craftie knaues here amongst vs as in any place: witness the poore Miller of Cambridge, that, hauing no roome for his hen-loft but the Testor of his bed, and it was not possible for any hungrie Poulters to come there, but they must stand vpon the one side of it, and so not steale them but with great hazard; had in one night notwithstanding (when hee and his wife were a snorting) all the whole progenie of their Pullerie taken away, and neither of them heard anie sturring: it is an odde tricke, but what of that, we must not stand vpon it, for wee haue grauer matters in hand than the stealing of Hennes. Hypocrifie, I remember, was our Text, which was one of the chiefe morrall Diuels, our late Doctors affirme to bee most busie in these dayes: and busie it is, in trueth, more than anye Bee that I knowe: now you talke of a Bee, Ile tell you a tale of a Battledore.

The Beare on a time, beeing chiefe Burgomaster of all the Beasts vnder the Lyon, gan thinke with himselfe how hee might surfet in pleasure, or beft husband his Authoritie to enlardge his delight and contentment. With that hee beganne to prye and to smell through euery corner of the Forrest for praye, to haue a thousande imaginations with him-
felfe what daintie morfell he was master of, and yet had not tafted: whole Heards of sheepe had hee deuoured, and was not satisfied; fat Oxen, Heyfers, Swine, Calues, and young Kiddes, were his ordinarie vyands: he longed for horse-flesh, and went pre- fently to a medowe, where a fat Cammell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force, because he was a huge beast and well shod, he thought to betray vnder the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he should stoop to doo him truage, he might feaze vpon his throat, and stiflle him before he should be able to recouer himselfe from his false embrace: but therin he was deceiued: for, comming vnto this stately Beast with this imperious message, in stead of doing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmoft heeles, and stroake him such a blowe on the for-head that hee ouerthrew him. Thereat not a little moou'd, and enrag'd, that he should be so dishonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he consulted with the Ape how he might be reuëged. The Ape, abhorring him by nature, because he ouer-lookt him so Lordly, and was by so many degrees greater than he was, aduised him to digge a pit with his pawes right in the way where this big boand Gentleman shound passe, that so stumbling and falling in, he might lightly skip on his backe, and bridle him, and then hee [could] come and seaze on
him at his pleasure. No sooner was this persuaded than performed: for envy, that is never idle, could not sleep in his wrath, or over-slip the least opportunity, till he had seen the confusion of his enemy. Alas, goodly Creature, that thou mightest no longer live. What availeth thy gentleness, thy prowess, or the plentiful pasture wherein thou wast fed, since malice triumphs over all thou commandest? Well may the Mule rise up in arms, and the Asse bray at the Authors of thy death: yet shall their fury be fatal to themselves, before it take hold on these Traitors. What needeth more words? the devourer feedes on his captive, and is gorged with blood. But as avarice and cruelty are evermore thirstie, so far'd it with this hungrie Usurper: for having fleeth his ambition with this treacherous conquest, he past along through a groue, where a Heard of Deare were a ranging; whom, when he had steadfastly surveyed from the fatthest to the leanest, hee singled out one of the fairest of the companie, with whom he meant to close up his stomacke instead of cheese: but because the Wood-men were ever stirring thereabout, and it was not possible for one of his coate to commit such outrage undiscovered, and that, if he were espied, his life were in perill; though not with the Lyon, whose eyes he could blinde as he lift, yet with the lesser sort of the brutish Comminaltie, whom no flattrie
might pacifie. Therefore, he determined flylie and priuilie to poyfon the streame where this iolly Forester wonetd to drink; & as he determined, so he did: whereby it fell out, that when the Sunne was ascended to his height, & all the nimble Citizens of the Wood betooke them to their Laire, this youthfull Lord of the Lawnds, all faint and malcontent, (as prophecying his neere approaching mishap by his languishing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, strayed aside from the rest of his fellowship, and betooke him all carelessly to the corrupted fountaine that was prepared for his Funerall. Ah, woe is me, this poyfon is pitiles. What need I say more, since you know it is death with whom it encounters. And yet cannot all this expence of life, set a period to insatiable Murther: but still it hath some anuile to worke vpon, and overcastes all opposite prosperitie, that may any way shadow his glorie. Too long it were to reherse all the practises of this sauadge blood-hunter: how he affailed the Unicorne as he slept in his den, and tore the hart out of his breast ere he could awake: how he made the leffer beasts lie in wait one for the other, and the Crocodyle to coape with the Bafiliske, that when they had entrechaungeably weakened each other, hee might come and insult ouer them both as he lift. But these were leffer matters, which daily vse had worene out of mens mouthes, and
he himself had so customably practisèd, that often exercise had quite abrogated the opinion of sinne, & impudencie throughly confirm'd an undaunted defiance of vertue in his face. Yet new-fangled lust, that in time is wearie of welfare, & will bee as soone cloyed with too much ease and delicacie, as Pouertie with labour and scarcitie, at length brought him out of loue with this greedie, bestiall humour: and now he affected a milder varietie in his diet: he had bethought him what a pleasant thing it was to eate nothing but honie another while, and what great store of it there was in that Countrey.

Now did he cast in his head, that if hee might bring the husbandmen of the foyle in opinion that they might buy honey cheaper than being at such charges in keeping of Bees, or that those bees which they kept were most of the drones, & what should such idle drones doe with such flately Huyes, or lye sucking at such precious Honnicombes; that if they were tooke away from them, and distributed equally abroad, they would releue a great many of painfull labourers that had need of them, and would continually liue serviceable at their commaund, if they might enjoy such a benefite. Nay more, let them giue Waspes but onely the wax, and dispose of the honnie as they thinke good, and they shall humme and buzz a thousand times lowder than
they, and haue the hiue fuller at the yeeres end (with yong ones, I meane) than the Bees are wont in ten yere.

To broach this deuice, the Foxe was addreft like a shepheardes dogge, and promisf to haue his Pattent feald, to bee the Kings Poulterer for euer, if hee could bring it to paffe. Faith, quoth he, and Ie put it in a venter, let it hap how it will. With that he grew in league with an old Camelion, that could put on all shapes, and imitate any colour, as occasion serued, and him he addreft, sometime like an Ape to make sport, & then like a Crocodile to weepe, sometime like a Serpent to fling, and by and by like a Spaniel to fawne, that with these sundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perswade the world he ment as he spake, and only intended their good, when he thought nothing leffe. In this disguife, these two deceivers went vp & downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of Simplicitie, making the poore filly Swaines beleue they were cunning Physitians, and well seene in all Cures, that they could heale any maladie, though neuer so daungerous, & restore a man to life that had been dead two dayes, onely by breathing vpon him: aboue all things they perswaded them, that the honny that their Bees brought forth, was poysonous and corrupt, by reafon that those floures and hearbs, out of which
it was gathered and exhaled, were subject to the infection of every Spe/d/er and venimous Canker, and not a loathsome Toade (how detestable foeuer) but reposde himselle vnder theyr shadow, and lay sucking at their rootes continually: wheras in other Countries, no noisome or poisnous creature might liue, by reason of the imputed goodnes of the Soyle, or carefull diligence of the Gardners aboue ours, as for example, Scotland, Denmarke, & some more pure parts of the 17 Prouinces. These perswafions made the good honeft Hufbandmen to pause, and mistrust their owne wits very much, in nourishing such dangerous Animals, but* yet, I know not how antiquitie and cuftome fo ouer-rulde their feare, that none would resolue to abandon them on the fodaine, til they saw a further inconuenience: whereby my two cunning Philosophers were driuen to studie Galen anew, and seeke splenatiue simples, to purge their popular Patients of the opinion of their olde Traditions and Cuftomes: which, how they wrought with the moft part that had leaft wit, it were a world to tell. For now nothing was Canonick but what they spake, no man would conuerfe with his wife but first askt their aduise, nor pare his nayles, nor cut his beard, without their prescription: fo fenceles, so wauering is the light vncon-/staut Multitude, that will daunce after cuerie
mans pype; and sooner prefer a blinde harper that can squeake out a new horne-pipe, than Alcinous or Appolloes varietie, that imitates the eight strains of the Doryan melodie. I speak this to amplify ye nouell folly of the headlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vaassailles to the legerdemaine of these iugling Mountebanks, are presently drawne to contemne Art and experience, in comparison of the ignorance of a number of audacious ideots. The Fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conscience, and the Camelion can addresse himself like an Angell whensoever he is disposed to worke mischief by myracles: but yet in the end, their secret drifts are laide open, and Linceus eyes, that see through stone walles, haue made a passage into the close couerture of their hypocrisie.

For one daye, as these two Deuifers were plotting by themselfes how to drive all the Bees from their Honnycombes, by putting wormewood in their Hyues, and strewing Henbane and Rue in euery place where they resort: a Flye that paft by, and heard all their talke, fromaking the Foxe of olde, for that he had murthred so many of his kindred with his flayle-driuing taile, went presently and buzd in Linceus eares, the whole purport of their malice: who awaking his hundred eyes at these vndescribed tidings gan pursue them wheresoeuer
they went, & trace their intents as they proceeded into action, so that ere halfe their baytes were cast forth, they were apprehended and imprisoned, and all their whole counsaile detected. But long ere this, the Beare, impatient of delayes, and consum'd with an inward griefe in himselfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat Hinde that out-ran him, he went into the woods all melancholie, and there dyed for pure anger: leauing the Foxe and the Camelion to the destinie of their desert, and mercie of their Judges. How they scape I knowe not, but some saye they were hangd, and so weele leave them.

How lik'ft thou of my tale, friend Persie? Haue I not described a right earthly Diuell vnsto thee, in the discourse of this bloodie minded Beare? or canst thou not attract the true image of Hypocrifie, under the description of the Foxe and the Camelion?

Yes, very well (quoth I); but I would gladly have you returne to your first subieect, since you have moued doubts in my minde, which you have not yet discuft.

Of the sundrie opinions of the Diuell thou meanest, and them that imagine him to haue no existence, of which sort are they that first inuented the Prouerbe, Homo homini Daemon: meaning thereby, that that power which we call the Diuell,
and the miniftring Spirits belonging to his king-
dome are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares
to scarre boyes: and that there is no such essence
at all, but only it is a terme of large content,
describing the rancor, grudge, & bad dealing of
one man towards another: as, namely, when one
friend talkes with another subtilly, and seekes to
dyue into/his commoditie, that hee may deprive
him of it craftilie; when the sonne seeks the death
of the father, that he may be infeoffed in his wealth:
& the stepdame goes about to make away her
sonne-in-law, that her children may inherit: whē
brothers fall at iarres for portions, & shall, by
open murther or priuy conspiracy, attempt the
confusion of each other, only to ioyne house to
house, and vnite two Liuelihoods in one: when
the seruant shal rob his Master, and men put in
truft, start away from their oathes and vowes, they
care not how.

In such cases & many more, may one man be
sayd to bee a diuell to another, & this is the second
opinion. The third is that of Plato, who not onely
affirmeth that there are diuels, but deuided them
into three forts, every one a degree of dignitie
aboue the other; the first are those, whose bodies
are cōpact of ỹ purest ayrie Element, combined
with such transparant threeds, that neither they
do partake so much fire as should make them
visible to fight, or haue any such affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be preft or toucht: & these he fetteth in the highest incomprehensible degree of heauen. The second, he maketh these, whom Apuleius doth call reasonable Creatures, paffe in minde and eternall in Time, being those apostata spirites that rebelled with Belzebub: whose bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former: but, after their transgression, they were obscured in a thicke, fiery matter, and ever after assigned to darknes. The third, he attributes to those men that, by some divine knowledge or understanding, seeming to aspyre aboue mortalitie, are called Daemona, (that is) Gods: for this word Daemon contayneth eyther, and Homer in euery place doth vs it both for that omnipotent power that was before al things, and the euill spirite that leadeth men to error: so doth Syrianus testifie, that Plato was called Daemon, because he disputed of deepe Common-wealth matters, greatly available to the benefite of his Countrey: and Ariftole because he wrote at large of al things subjicet to mouing and fence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word Daemon, a capable name of Gods, of men, and of diuells, which is farre distant from the scope of my demand: for I doo only inquire of the diuel, as this common appellation of the Diuel, signifieth a malignant spirite, enemie to man-
kinde, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Thofe are the second kinde, faid he, ufually termed detractors, or accufers, that are in knowledge infinite, infomuch as, by the quicknes of their wits & agreeable mixtures of the Elements, they fo com-preprehend thofe feminarie vertues to men vnknown, that thofe things which, in course of time or by growing degrees, Nature of itfelfe can effect, they, by their art and skil in haftning the works of Nature, can contriue and compaffe in a moment: as the Magitians of Pharao, who, whereas Nature, not without fome interpoftion of time and ordinarie causcs of conception, brings forth frogs, serpents, or any liuing thing els, they, without all fuch distance of space, or circumfcrition of feafon, euen in a thought, as foone as their King commanded, couered the land of Ægypt with this monifterous encrease. Of the originall of vs spirites, the Scripture moft amply maketh mention, namely, that Lucifer, (before his fall) an Arch-angel, was a cleere body, compact of the pureft and brighteft of the ayre, but after his fall hee was vayled with a grofer fubftance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thicke ayre, which he ftill reteyneth. Neither did he onely fall, when hee ftroue with Michael, but drewe a number of Angels to his faction; who ioynt partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewife partakers of his punishment, and all thrust
out of heauen together by one judgement: who euer since doo nothing but wander about the Earth, and tempt and enforce frayle men to enterpris[e] all wickednes that may be, and commit most horrible and abominable things against God. Meruaile not that I discouer so much of our estate vnto thee: for the Scripture hath more than I mention, as S. Peter, where he sayth that God spared not his Angels that sinned: and in another place; wher he faith that they are bound with the chains of darknes, and throwne headlong into hell: which is not meant of any locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters; for, as Aust[n] affirmeth, wee doo inhabite the Region vnder the Moone, / and haue the thick aire assigned vs as a prison, from whence we may with small labour cast our nets where wee lift: yet are we not so at our disp[o]sition, but that we are still commanded by Lucifer, (although we are in number infinite) who retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantly affected the Maiestie of God, hath still his ministring Angels about him, whom he employes in feuerall charges, to seduce & deceiue as him seemeth beft: as those spirites which the Latins call Iouios and Antemeridianos, to speake out of Oracles, and make the people worship them as Gods, when they are nothing but deluding Diuels, that couet to haue a false Deitie ascrib[ed] vnto them, & draw men vnto their loue by won-
ders & prodigies, that els would hate them deadly, if they knewe their malevolence and enuoy. Such a monarchizing spirit it was that sayd vnto Chrift, *If thou wilt fall downe, and worship me, I will give thee all the Kingdomes of the earth:* and such a spirit it was that posseft the Libian Sapho, and the Emperour Diocefsian, who thought it the blessed thing that might be to be called God. For the one being weary of humane honor, & inspired with a supernaturall folly, taught little birds, that were capable of speech, to pronounce distinctly, *Magnus Deus Sapho:* that is to say, *A' great god is Sapho:* which words, when they had learned readily to carroll, and were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randome, that so dispersing themselues every where, they might induce the people to account of him as a God. The other was so arrogant, that he made his subiects fall prostrate on their faces, and lifting vp their hands to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The second kind of Diuels, which he most impoyeth, are those northerne *Marcij,* called the spirits of reuenge, & the authors of massacres, & seedsmen of mischiefe: for they haue commissioun to incense men to rapines, sacriledge, theft, murther wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, & they commaund certaine of the Southern spirits (as
flaues) to wayt vpon them, as also great Arioch, that is tearmed the spirite of reuenge.

These / know how to dissociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with such violence, that they may not be inited, & are predominant in many other dometfcall mutinies: of whom, if you lift to heare more, read the 39 of Ecclesiasticus. The prophet Esay maketh mention of another Spirit, sent by God to the Egyptians, to make them stray and wander out of the way, that is to say, the Spirite of lying, which they call Bolychym. The spirits that entice men to gluttonie & lust, are certaine watry spirits of the West, and certaine Southerne spirits as Nefrach and Kelen, which for the most part prosecute vnlawfull loues, and cherish all vnnatural desires: they wander through lakes, fish-ponds, and fennes, & overwhelme ships, cast boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are swimming: therefore are they counted the most pestilent, troublesome, and guilefull spirits that are: for by the helpe of Alynach, a Spirit of the West, they will raise ilormes, cause earthquakes, whirlwindes, rayne, haile or snow in the clearest day that is: and if euer they appeare to any man, they come in womens apparell. The spirits of the aire will mixe themselues with thunder & lightening, and so infect the Clyme where they raise any tempeft, that sodainly great mortalitie shal ensue to
the inhabitants from the infectious vapors which arise from their motions: of such S. John maketh mention in the ninth of the Apocalips; their patrone is Mereris, who beareth chief rule about the middle time of the day.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the regions of the Moone, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they may there execute, as in their proper constorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirits of the Earth keepe, for the most part, in Forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noyance, and sometime in the broad fields, where they lead travellers out of the right way, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through excessive melancholy, like Ajax Telamonius, & so prove hurtfull to themselves, and dangerous to others: of this number the chiefe are Samaab and Achymael, spirits of the East, that have no power to doo any great harme, by reason of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits, are such as lurk in dens & little cauernes of the earth, and hollow creuifes of mountaines, that they may dyue into the bowels of the earth at their pleasures: these dig metals and watch treasures, which they continually transport from place to place, that none should haue use of them: they raise windes that vomit flames, & shake the foundation of buildings, they daunce in
PIERCE PENILESSE.

rounds in pleasant Launds, and greene meddowes, with noyfes of musick and ministrarifie, & vanish away when any comes neere them: they will take vpon them any similitude but of a woman, and terrifie men in the likenes of dead mens ghofts in the night time: and of this qualitie & condition the Necromancers hold Gaziel, Fegor, and Anarazel, Southerne spirits, to be. Befides, there are yet remaining certaine lying spirits, who (although all bee giuen to lie by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the rest, being named Pythonistes, of whom Apollo comes to be called Pythaus: they haue a prince aswel as other spirits, of whom mention is made in the 3 booke of Kings, when he saith he will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all Ahabs prophets: from which those spirits of iniquitie doo little differ, which are called the vessels of wrath, that assist Belial (whom they interpret a spirite without yoake or controuler) in all damnable deuifes and inuentions. Plato reports them to bee such as first devisd Cardes and dice, and I am in the mind, that the Monke was of the same order, that found out the vfe of Gunpouder, and the engines of warre thereto belonging. Those that write of these matters call this Belial Chodar of the Eaft, that hath all witches and conjurers spirits vnder his iurisdiction, & giues them leaue to helpe Juglers in their tricks,
& Simon Magus to doo miracles; allwaies prouided they bring a soule home to their Mafter for his hyre.

Yet are not these all, for there are spirits called spies & tale-cariers, obedient to Astaroth, whom the Greekes call Daimona, and S. John, The accuser of the brethren: also tempters, who for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euill Angels. Above all things they hate the light, and / reioyce in darknes, disquieting men maliciously in the night, & sometimes hurt them by pinching them, or blasting them as they sleepe: but they are not so much to be dreaded as other spirits, because if a man speake to them, they flee away, and will not abide. Such a spirit Plinius Secundus telleth of, that vsed to haunt a goodly house in Athens that Athenodorus hired; and such another Suetonius describeth to haue long houered in Lamianus garden, where Caligula lay buried, who for because he was onely couered with a fewe clods, and vnreuerently throwne amongst the weedes, hee merueilously disturbed the owners of the garden, & would not let them rest in their beds, till by his Sifters, returned from banishment, he was taken vp, & entoombed solemnly. Paufanias avoucheth (amongst other experiments) that a certaine spirit called Zazilus doth feed vpon dead mens corfes, that are not deeply enterred as they ought:
which to confirme, there is a wonderfull accident set downe in the Danish historie of Asuitus and Asmundus, who, being two famous frends (well knowne in those parts) vowd one to another, that which of the two outlived the other, should be buried alive with his friend that first died. In short space Asuitus fell sicke and yeelded to nature: Asmundus, compelled by the oath of his friendship, took none but his horfe and his dog with him, and transported the dead bodie into a vaft cave under the earth, & ther determined (having victualled himselfe for a long time) to finifh his dayes in darkness, and neuer depart from him that he loued so dearly.

Thus shut vp, and enclosed in the bowels of the earth, it hapned Eritus, King of Sweueland, to passe that way with his armie, not full two moneths after: who coming to the toombe of Asuitus, and suspecting it a place where treasure was hidden, causd his Pioneers with their spades and mattockes to dig it vp: whereupon was discouered the loathsome body of Asmundus, al to besmeared with dead mens filth, & his visage most ugely and fearefull; which imbrued with congeald blood, and eaten and torne like a raw vlcer, made him so gaftly to behold, that all the lookers on were affrighted. He, seeing himselfe restored to light, and so many amazed men stand about him, re-
solved their uncertaine perplexitie in these tearmes.

Why stand you astonisht at my vnusual deformities? when no living man converseth with the dead but is thus disfigured. But other causes haue effected this alteration in me: for I know not what audacious spirit, sent by Gorgon from the deep, hath not onely most rauenously devoured my horse and my dog, but also hath layd his hungry paws upon mee, and, tearing downe my cheekes as you see, hath likewise rent away one of mine eares. Hence it is that my mangled shape seemes so monstrous, and my humane image obscure with gore in this wise. Yet escaped not this fell Harpie from mee vnreuengd: for, as he assayld me, I raught his head from his shoulders, and sheathed my sword in his body. Haue spirites their visible bodies, said I, that may be toucht, wounded, or pierst? Beleeue me, I neuer heard that in my life before this. Why, quoth he, although in their proper esseence they are creatures incorporal, yet can they take vpon the induments of any living body whatsoeuer, and transforme themselues into all kinde of shapes, whereby they may more easily deceiue our shallow wits and fences. So testifies Basilius, that they can put on a materiall forme when they lift. Socrates affirmeth that his Daemon did oftentimes talke with him, & that he saw & felt him many times. But Marcus Cherone-
Pierce Penilesse.

ius (a wonderfull discouerer of Diuels) writeth, that those bodies which they assuime are distin-

guisht by no difference of sex, because they are simple, and the discernance of sex belongs to bodies compoud: yet are they flexible, motiuue, and apt for any configuration; but not al of them alike; for the spirts of the Fire and Aire haue this power aboue the rest. The spirts of the water haue flow bodies resembling birds and women, of which kinde the Naiades & Nereides are much celebrated amongst Poets. Neuertheles, howeuer they are restrayned to their feueral similitudes, it is certaine that all of them desiere no forme or figure so much, as the likenesse of a man, & doo thinke themselues in heauen when they are infeost in that hue: where-

fore I know no other reaason but this, that man is the neereft representatō to God, in so much as the Scripture faith, He made man after his own likenesse and image: and they afferte, by reaason of their pride, to be as like God as they may, contend moost seriously to shroud themselues vnder that habit.

But, I pray, tell mee this, whether are there (as Porphirius holdeth) good spirts aswell as euill? Nay, certainly (quoth he) we are al euill, let Porphirius, Proclus, Apuleius, or the Platonists dispute to the contrary as long as they will: which I will confirme to thy capacity by the names that are euerywhere giuen vs in the Scripture: for the
diuell, which is the *Summum genus* to vs all, is called *Diabolus quasī deorsum ruens*, that is to say, falling downward, as hee that aspyring too high, was thrown from the top of felicitie to the lowest pit of despayre: and sathan, that is to say, an Aduersary, who, for the corruption of his malice, opposeth himselfe euer against God, who is the chiefeft good. In *Iob Behemoth* and *Leviathan*, and in the 9. of the *Apocalips, Apolyon*, that is to say, a Subuerter: because the foundation of those vertues, which our high Maker hath planted in our soules, hee vndermineth and subuertereth. A Serpent for his poysoning, a Lyon for his deuouring: a Furnace, for that by his malice the Elect are tried, who are vessels of wrath and salvation. In *Esay* a Syren, a Lamia, a Scrich-oule, an Estridge. In the Psalmes, an Adder, a Basiliske, a Dragon. And lastly, in the Gospel, Mammon, Prince of this world, and the Gournour of darknes: so that, by the whole course of condemning names that are giuen vs, and no one instance of any fauourable tytle bestowed vpon vs, I positiusely set downe that all spirits are euill. Now, whereas the Diuines attribute vnto vs these good and euill spirits, the good to guide vs from euil, and the euil to draw vs from goodnesse, they are not called spirits, but Angells, of which sort was *Raphaell*, the good Angel of *Tobias*, who exilde the euill spirit *Afmo-
dius into the desert of Ægypt, that he might be the more secure from his temptation. Since wee have entered thus far into the diuels commonwealth, I beseech you certificate me thus much; whether have they power to hurt granted them from god or from themselves: can they hurt as much as they will? Not so, quoth hee, for although that diuells be most mightie spirites, yet can they not hurt but permisshuelie, or by some speciall dispensation: as when a man is fallen into the state of an outlaw, the Lawe dispenseth with them that kills him, & the Prince excludes him from the protection of a subject, so, when a man is a relaps from God and his Lawes, God withdrawes his prouidence from watching ouer him, & authoriseth the deuil, as his instrument, to assault him and torment him, so that whatsoever he dooth, is Limitata potestate, as one saith: insomuch as a haire cannot fall from our heads, without the will of our heauenlie Father.

The diuell could not deceive Achabs prophets till he was licensed by God, nor exercise his tyranie ouer Job, till he had given him commissjon, nor enter into the heard of swine, till Christ bad them goe. Therefore, need you not feare the diuell any whit, as long as you are in the fauour of God, who raineth him so straight, that except he let him loose he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion,
which I now retaine, is but a thinge of suffrance, granted vnto me to plague such men as hunt after strife, & are delighted with variance. It may be so very well, but whether haue you that skil to foretell thinges to come, that is ascribed vnto you? We haue (quoth he) sometimes: not that we are priuie to the eternall counsel of god, but for that by the sense of our ayrie bodies, we haue a more refined faculty of foreseeing, than men possibly can haue, that are chained to such heauie earthlie moulder; or els for that by the incomparable pernicitie of those ayrie bodies, we not onely outstrip the swiftnes of men, beasts and birds, wherby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of things sooner, than those that by the dulnes of their earthlie sense com a great waie behind vs. Herunto may we adioine our long experience in the course of things from the beginning of the world, which men want, and, therfore, cannot haue that deepe conie&ure that we haue. Nor is our knowledge any more than conie&ure: for pre- science only belongeth to God, & that geffe/that we haue proceedeth from the compared disposition of heavenly and erthlie bodies, by whose long obserued temperature, we doo divine manie times, as it happens: & therefore doo we take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchase estimation to our names, & bringe men in admiration with that we
do, and so be counted for Gods. The myracles wee work are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assistit by that supernatural skil we haue in the experience of nature aboue al other creatures. But againft these illusions of your subtletie & vain terrors you inflict, what is our chiefe refuge? I shalbe accounted a foolish Diuel anon, if I bewray the secrets of our kingdome, as I haue begun: yet speake I no more than learned Clarks haue written, and asmuch as they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origin, in his treatise against Celsus, faith, there is nothing better for him that is vexed with spirits, then the naming of Iesu the true God, for he auoucheth, he hath seen diuers druen out of mens bodies by that means. Athanasius in his booke De varijs questionibus faith, The presentest remedie against the inuasion of euill spirits, is the beginning of the 67. Psalme, Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici ejus. Cyprian counsels men to adiure spirits only by the name of the true God. Some hold that fire is a preseruatiue for this purpose, because when any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little goe out, as it were of their owne accord, and the tapers are by degrees extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name of Vehiculum ignis superioris, and often rehearsing the Articles of our faith. A third fort are perfwaded that the
brandishing of swords is good for this purpose, because Homer faineth, that Ulisses, sacrificing to his mother, wafted his sword in the aire to chase the spirits from the bloude of the sacrifice. And Sybylla, conducting Aeneas to hell, begins hir charmes in this fort.

Procul, O procul, esse prophani:
Tuque juvande viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.

Philoftratus reporteth, that he and his companions meeting that diuell which artists entitle Apolonus, as they came one night from banqueting, with such termes as he is curft in / holy writ, they made him run awaie howling. Manie in this case extoll perfume of Calamentum paonia, Menta palma Christi, and Appius. A number prefer the carying of red Corral about them, or of Arthemifia hypericon, Ruta verbena: & to this effect manie doo 

the jyngle of keyes, the found of the harp, and the clofhing of armor. Some of old time put great superftition in characters, curiously engraued in their Pentagonon, but they are all vaine, & will do no good, if they be otherwise vfed than as signes of couenaunt betweene the diuell and them. Nor doo I affirme all the rest to be vnfallible pre-

scriptions, though sometime they haue their vfe: but that the onelie assured waie to resist their attempts is prayer and faith, gainft which all the
diuells in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle spirit, I wil importune thee no farther, but commit this Supplication to thy care: which, if thou deliuer accordinglie, thou shalt at thy returne haue mor[e] of my custome: for by that time I wil haue finisshed certain letters to diuers Orators & Poets, dispersedd in your dominions. That as occasion shal servue, but nowe I must take leave of you, for it is Terme time, and I haue some busines. A Gentleman (a frend of mine, that I never saw before) steaies for me, and is like to be vndone if I come not in to beare witnes on his side: wherefore Bazilex manus till our next meeting.

Gentle Reader, tandem aliquando I am at leasure to talke to thee. I dar say thou hast cald me a hundred times dolt for this senseles discourse: it is no matter, thou doft but as I haue done by a number in my dayes. For who can abide a scurrue pedling Poet to pluck a man by the fleeue at euerie third step in Paules Churchyard, and when hee comes in to seruey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vp in wart paper. It were verie good the dogwhipper in Paules would haue a care of this in his vnfauerie visitation euerie Saterday: for it is dangerous for such of the Queenes liedge people, as shall take a viewe of them faiting.

Looke / to it, you Booksellers & Stationers, and
let not your fshops be infected with anie such goose gyblets, or flinking garbadge as the Jygs of news-mongers, and especiallie such of you as frequent Westmınster hall, let them be circumspect what dunghill papers they bring thither: for one bad phamphlet is inough to raise a dampe that may poyson a whole Terme, or at the leaf a number, of poore Clyents, that haue no money to preuent il aire by breaking their fafts ere they come thether. Not a base Inck-dropper, or fcuruy plodder at Nouerint, but nailes his aaffles cares on euerie poaft, & comes off with long Circumquaque to the Gentleman Readers, yea, the moft excerementary dishlickers of lerning are grown so valiant in impudence, that now they set vp their faces (like Turks) of gray paper, to be spet at for siluer games in Finsburie fields. Whilst I am thus talking, me thinkes I heare one say, What a fop is this, he entitles his Booke a Supplication to the Diuell, & doth nothing but raile on ideots, and tells a storie of the nature of spirits. Haue patience, good sir, and weele come to you by and by. Is it my Title you finde fault with? Why, haue you not seen a Towne furnamed by the principall house in the Towne, or a Noble man deriue his Baronie from a little village where he hath leaft land? So fareth it by me in christening of my booke. But some will objeçt, wheretoo tends chis discouerie of diuels,
PIERCE PENILLESSE.

or how is it induced? Forsooth, if thou wilt needs know my resoun, this it is. I bring Pierce Penileffe to question with the diuel, as a yong nouice would talke with a great trauailer, who, carying an Englishmans appetite to enquire of news, will be sure to make what vse of him he may, and not leaue any thing vnaeft, that he can resolue him of. If then the diuell be tedious in discoursing, impute it to Pierce Penileffe that was importunate in demanding; or if I haue not made him so secret or subtil in his art, as diuels are wont, let that of Laætantius be mine excuse, *lib 2, cap 16 de Origenis errore*, when he faith, the diuels haue no power to lie to a juft man, and if they adiure them by the maiesty of the high God, they will not onely confesse them-selles to be Diuels, but also tel their / names as they are. *Deus bone,* what a vaine am I fallen into? what, an Epistle to the Readers in the end of thy book? Out vpon thee for an arrent blocke, where leerndst thou that wit? O sir, hold your peace: a fellon neuer comes to his anfwere before the offence be committed. Wherefore, if I in the beginning of my Book shoule haue come off with a long Apologie to excufe my selfe, it were all one, as if a theefe, going to steale a hорse, shoule deuise by the waie as he went, what to spake when he came at the gallowes. Here is a croffe waie, and I thinke it good heere to part. Farwell, fare-

N. II.
well, good Parenthesis, and commend me to Ladie Vanitie, thy mistres.

Now, Pierce peniles, if for a parting blow thou haft ere a tricke in thy budget more then ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good patron will pay for all. I, where is he? Promissis quilibet diues esse potest. But cap and thanks is all our Courtiers payment: wherefore, I would counsell my frends to be more considerate in their Dedications, and not cast away so many months labour upon a clowne that knowes not how to vse a Scholer: for what reason haue I to bestow any of my wit vpon him, that wil bestow none of his wealth vpon me. Alas, it is an easie matter for a goodlie tall fellow, that shineth in his filkes, to come and out face a poore simple Pedant in a thred bare cloak, and tell him his Booke is prettie, but at this time he is not provided for him: marrie, about two or three daies hence if he come that waie, his Page shal say he is not within, or els he is so busie with my L. How-call-ye him, and my L. What-call-ye him, that he may not be spoken withall. These are the common courfes of the world, which every man priuatly murmurs at, but none dares openlie vpbraid, because all Artists for the most are base minded and like the Indians, that haue store of gold & precious stones at commad, yet are ignorant of their value, and therefore let the Spaniards, the Englishmen
PIERCE PENILESSE.

and every one lode their ships with them without molestation. So they, enioyeing and poftefling the puritie of knowledge, (a treasure farre richer than the Indian Mynes) let euery proud Thrafo be partaker of their perfections, repaieing them no profit: and gyld himfelfe with the titles they giue him, when he wil scarce returne them a good word for their labor: giue an Ape but a nut, and he wil looke your head for it; or a Dog a bone, and hele wag his tayle: but giue me one of my young Masters a booke, and he will put of his hat and blufh, and fo go his waie.

Yes, now I remember me, I lie; for I know him that had thankes for three yeares worke, and a Gentleman that beftowed much cost in refining of musicke, & had scarce Fidlers wages for his labor. We want an Aretine here among vs, that might ftrip these golden affes out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with railing, leave them on the dunghil for carion. But I will write to his ghoft by my carrier, & I hope hele repare his whip, and vfe it againft our English Peacockes, that painting themfelves with Church spoiles, like mightie mens fepulchres, haue nothing but Atheifme, schifme, hypocrifie, and vainglorie, like rotten bones lie lurking within them. O how my foule abhors these buckram giants, that having an outward face of honor fet vpon them by flat-
terers & parasites, have their inward thoughts stuffed with straw and feathers, if they were narrowly sifted.

Farre be it, bright stars of Nobilitie, and glistening Attendaunts on the true Diana, that this my speach should be anie way injurious to your glorious magnificence: for in you live those sparkes of Augustus liberalitie, that never sent any away empty: and Science seavenfold throne, welnigh ruined by ryot and avarice, is mightely supported by your plentiful larges, which makes Poets to sing such goodlie Himnes of your praise, as no envious posteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my private experience, and with a tongue vnworthie to name a name of such worthinesse, affectionately emblazon to the eyes that wonder, the matchles Image of Honor, & magnificent rewarder of vertue, Ioues eagle-borne Ganimed, thrice noble Amintas. In whose high spirit, such a Deitie of widsome appeareth, that if Homer were to write his Odyfsea new, (where, under the person of Vlyfes, hee describeth a singular man of perfection, in whome all ornaments both of peace and war are assembeld in the height of their excelence) he need no other instance to augment his conceipt, than the rare carriage of his honorable minde. Many writers and good wits, are giuen to commend their patrons and Benefactors, some for
prowesse, some for policie, others for the glorie of their Ancestrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie: but if my vnable pen should euer enterprise such a continuatе tafke of praife, I woulde embowell a number of those windpuff bladders, and disfurnishe their bald pates of the perriwigs Poets haue lent them, that so I might restore glorie to his right inheritance, and these stoln Titles to their true owners: which, if it would so fall out, (as time maie worke all things) the aspiring nettles, with their shadie topes, shal no longer ouer-dreep the best hearbs, or keep them from the smiling aspect of the Sunn, that liue & thriue by comfortable beames. None but Desert should fit in Fames grace, none but Hеrіоr be remembred in the chronicles of Prowesse, none but thou, most courteous Amyntas, be the seconde musicall argument of the knight of the Red-crosse.

Oh decus atque ævi gloria summa tui.

And heere (heauenly Spencer) I am most highlie to accuse thee of forgetfulness, that in that honourable Catalogue of our English heroes, which infueth the conclusion of thy famous Fairie Queene, thou wouldst let so speciall a Piller of Nobilitie passe vnfaluted. The verie thought of his farre derived descent, and extraordinarie parts, wherewith hee attoineth the world, and drawes all hearts to his
Pierce Penilesse.

loue, woulde haue inspired thy forewearied Muse
with new furie to proccede to the next triumphs of
thy statelie Goddeffe: but as I, in fauor of so rare
a s chol ler, suppose with this counfaile he refraind
his mention in this first part, that hee might with
full faile proccede to his due commendations in the
second. Of this occasion long since I happened to
frame a Sonnet, which, being wholie intended to
the reuerence of this renoumed Lord (to whom I
owe all the vtmoſte powers of my loue and dutie)
I meant heere for variety of stile to inſert.

Peru/ſing yeſternight, with idle eyes,
The Fairy Singers ſtately tuned verſe:
And viewing after Chap-mens wonted guife,
What strainge contents the title did rehearſe.
I ſtreight leapt ouer to the latter end,
Where like the queint Comædians of our time
That when their Play is doone do fall to ryme,
I found ſhort lines, to ſundry Nobles pend.
Whom he as ſpeciall Mirrors ſingled fourth,
To be the Patrons of his Poetry;
I read them all, and reuerenc’ their worth,
Yet wondred he left out thy memory.
But therefore geft I he ſuppreſt thy name,
Because few words might not ſcoprifte thy fame.

Beare with me gentle Poet, though I conceiue
not aright of thy purpose, or be too inquisitiue into
the intent of thy obliuion: for, how euer my con-
icecture may misle the cushion, yet shal my speech
favour of friendship, though it be not alied to
judgement.

*Tantum hoc molior,* in this short digression, to
acquaint our countrymen, that liue out of the
Eccho of the Courte, with a common knowledge
of his invaluabe vertues, and shew my selfe thank-
full (in some part) for benefits receiued: which
since words may not counteruaile, that are the
valuall lip-labour of euerie idle discoursfer, I conclude
with that of *Ouid*:

*Accipe per longos tibi qui deseruiat annos,*

*Accipe qui pura novit amare fide.*

And if my zeale and dutie (though all to meane
to please) may by any industry, be reformed to
your gratious liking, I submit the simplicitie of my
endeuours to your service, which is all my per-
formance may profer, or my ability performe.

*Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,*

*Officium pauper numeret studiumque fidemque.*

And so I breake off this endless argument of
speeche abruptlie.

FINIS.
APPENDIX NOTE.

Agreeably to promise in Note prefixed to 'Pierce Penniless' (page 2), I place here the more noticeable 'faults' of the Jhones edition, as it is represented in the late Mr. J. Payne Collier's reproduction for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1842). It would have been easy to have multiplied these 'faults'—against which Nashe himself wrote vehemently—but those recorded may be accepted as at once fairly representational and showing the advantage of taking for text the Author's own edition of 1592.

Page 9, line 20, 'milder' misprinted 'milde.'
" 11, " 20, 'whipt out' misprinted 'whipt.'
" 19, " 26, 'thinke you could' (dropped).
" 26, " 26, 'Earle' misprinted 'carle.'
" 27, " 11, 'Lady Swin-fnout' misprinted 'Ladie Manibetter.'
" 28, " 26, 'a (cornfull melancholy... course & ...' misprinted 'melancholike course in his gate and countenance.'
" 29, " 17, 'outhriftes' misprinted 'outhrifts.'
" 34, " 3, 'cafe' misprinted 'eafe.'
" 34, " 7, 'finers' misprinted 'finders.'
" 35, " 2, 'a pair of shoos and a Canvas-dublet' misprinted 'a scholler bread and cheefe.'
" 35, " 5, 'obiecxt' misprinted 'abiecxt' [but query ?].
" 35, " 14, 'Raynard' misprinted 'Raynold.'
" 38, " 15, 'then a flab' misprinted 'then the flab.'
" 39, " 17, 'thrumd' misprinted 'thrumb.'
" 39, " 22, 'flaft' misprinted 'puft.'
" 45, " 4, 'Troynowant' misprinted 'Troynowant.'
" 45, " 12, 'furioes' misprinted 'furies.'
" 45, " 16, 'furde' misprinted 'furre.'
On the other hand, it is due to the Jhones edition to acknowledge several correct readings in single words as against incorrect in our '92 text, e.g. 'shape' for 'shame' (p. 19, l. 24), 'this' for 'thus' (p. 30, l. 17), 'yeomen' for 'yeoman' (p. 45, l. 18), 'juice' for 'juifte' (p. 60, l. 2).

A. B. G.
VII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

I. A Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Astrologicall Prognostication, etc.

1591-2.
NOTE.

For the 'Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Astrological Prognostication' I am indebted to the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction—Biographical, in Vol. I., and 'Critical' in Vol. IV.—on it, and other related publications.—A. B. G.
A Wonderfull
strange and miraculous, Astro-
logicall Prognostication for
this yeer of our Lord God.
1591.

Discouering such wonders to
happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced
since Noes floud.

Wherein if there be found one lye,
the Author will loose his credit
for euer.

By Adam Fouleweather, Student
in Asse-tronomy.

Imprinted at London by Thomas
Scarlet.
(1591.)
To the Readers health.

Itting Gentlemen vpon Douer clifffes, to quaint my selfe with the art of Navigation, and knowe the course of the Tides, as the Danske Crowes gather on the Sandes against a storme: so there appeared on the downs such a flock of knaues, that by Astrallogical conjectures I began to gather, that this yeere would prove intemperate by an extreme heat in Somer, insomuch that the stones in Cheap side should be so hot, that divers persons should feare to goe from Poules to the Counter in the Poultrye: whereupon I betook me to my Ephimerides, and erecting a figure, haue found such strange accidents to fall out this yeere, Mercury being Lord and predominate in the house of Fortune, that many fooles shall haue full cofers, and wise men walke vp and downe with empty pursles: that if Jupiter were not ioyned with him in a favouruable aspect, the Butchers / of Eaft-cheape shou'd doo little or nothing all Lent but make prickes: seeing
therefore the wonders that are like to fall out this present yeere, I haue for the benefit of my Countrymen taken in hand to make this Prognostication, discoursing breefelye of the Eclipses both of Sunne and Moone, with their dangerous effectes like to followe, which if God preuent not: many poore men are like to fast on Sondaies for want of food, and such as haue no shooes to goe barefoot, if certaine deuout Coblers proue not the more curteous: but yet Astrologie is not so certaine, but it may sayle: and therfore diuers Hostesses shall chaulke more this yeere then their Guests wil wipe out: So that I conclude, whatsoever is saide by art. _Sapiens dominabitur astra._

Your freend and Student in Asle-trologie.

_Adam Foulleweather._
Of the Eclipses
that shall happen this present yeere, to the great and fearfull terrifying of the beholders.

If we may credit the authenticall cenfures of Albumazan and Ptolomey, about the motions of celestiall bodies, whose influence dooth exitat and procure continuall mutability in the lower region: we shal finde y the Moon this yeere shall be eclipsed, which shall happen in one of y 12. moneths, & some of the foure / quarters of the yeere, whose pointes as they shal be totallye darkened, so the effectes shall be wondrous and strange. For Cancer being the sole house of the Moone, dooth presage that this yeere fruits shall be greatly eaten with Catterpillers: as Brokers, Farmers, and Flatterers,
which feeding on the sweate of other mens browes, 
shall greatlye hinder the beautye of the spring, 
and disparage the growth of all hotteft hearbes, 
vnleffe some northerly winde of Gods vengace 
clere the trees of such Catterpillers, with a hotte 
plague and the pestilence: but Cancer being a 
watrie signe and cheefe gouernour of flouds and 
streams, it foresheweth that Fishmongers if they 
be not well looke d to, shall goe downe as farre 
as Graues end in Wherries and foreftall the 
market, to the great preiudice of the poore, that 
all Lent ground their fare on the benefit of Salte 
siſhe and red herring: besides it signifieth that 
Brewers shal make hauocke of Theames water, 
and put more liquour then they were accustomed 
amongst their Maulte: to the ouerthrowe of cer-
tain craſſed Ale knights, whose morning draughtes 
of strong Beere is a great staye to their stomacks: 
a lamentable case if it be not looke d into and 
preuented by some speedye supplantion to the 
woorshipfull order of ale cunners. / But in this 
we haue great hope that because the effects cannot 
surprise the cause, diuers Tapſters shall truſt out 
more then they can get in: and although they 
fill their Pots but halfe full, yet for want of true 
dealing die in the Brewers debt. 
Thus much for the watry signe of Cancer, and 
because this Eclipſe is little visible in our horizon,
A PROGNOSTICATION.

I passe it ouer with this prouiso to all seafaring men, to cary more shirts then one with them a shipp boord, left to their great labor they spend many houres in murthering their vermin on the hatches.

The Eclipse of the Sunne.

The Eclipse of the Sun according to Proclus opinion is like to produce many hot and pestilent infirmities, especiallie amongst Sumners and Pettifoggers, whose faces being combusft with many fiery inflamatiiues shall shew y deareth, that by their deuout drinking is like to ensue of Barly, if violent death take not away such cofluming mault worms: diuers are like to be troubled with such hotte rewmes in their heads, that their haire shal fall of: and such hot agues shall raigne this yeere, with strange feuers and calamaties, that if the Sunne were not placed in a colde signe, Renish wine would rife to ten pence a quarte before the latter end of August: but diuers good Planets being retrograde, foretelleth that Lemmans this yeere shalbe plenty, insomuch that many shal vse them to bedward, for the qualifying of their hot and inflamed stomackes. And Mars being placed neere vnto the Sunne sheweth that there shalbe a great death among people: olde women that can
lieue no longer shall dye for age: and yong men that haue Vlurers to their father, shal this yeer haue great caufe to laugh, for the Deuill hath made a decree, that after they are once in hell, they shal neuer rise againe to trouble their executors: Beside that by all conie¢turall argumentes the influence of Mars shall be so violent, that diuers foulidiers in partes beyond the seas, shall fall out for want of their paye, and heere in our meridionall clyme, great quarrelles shall be raied between man and man, especially in cases of Law: gentry shall goe checkmate with Iuſtice, and coyne out countenance oftimes equitie: the poore sittting on pennyleffe benche, shall sell their Coates to friue for a strawe, and Lawyers laugh suchfooles to scorn as cannot keep their crownes in their pursſes.

Further, there is like to be great falling out amongſt Church men and certaine fond sects of religion like to trouble the commons: ſelfe conceipters and ouer holy counterfeites that delight in singularitie, shal rise vp and despiſe authoritie, presuming euen to abuse the higher powers, if Saturne with a frowning influence, did not threaten them with Tibornes conſequence. But whereas the Sun is darkned but by digits, and that vpon y south points, it prefageth great miseries to Spain and those Southerly Countries: Friers and Monks
A PROGNOSTICATION.

shal heat them fo this yeer with confessing of Harlots, that their crownes shall wax balde of the one accord, to the great impouerifhing of the Spanifh Barbers: Surgeons in Spain shall wax rich, and their Hospitals poore: such a peffilent mortallitie is like to fall amongft those hipocriticall maslemongers. The Dukes, Marqueffes & Counties shall haue their doublets closed with fuch Spanish buttons, that they shal neuer proue good quirefters, for the hotte and inflamed rewmes fallen down into their throats: It is further to be feared, that because the Eclipfe hapneth in Iulye, there will through the extrem heat grow fuch abundace of Fleas, that women shal not goo to bed before twelue a clocke at night, for the great murthers and ftratagems they are like to commit vpon those little animalls.

And whereas this Eclipfe falleth out at three of the clocke in the afternoone, it forefsheweth that manye shal goo soberer into Tauernes then they shal come out: and that he which drinkes hard and lyes cold, shal neuer dye of the sweate, although Gemini combuft and retrog[r]ade, sheweth that some shal haue fo fore a sweating, that they may sell their haire by the pound to fttufe Tennice balles: but if the Beadelles of Bridewell be carefull this Summer, it may be hoped that Peticote lane may be leffe pestered with ill aires then it was woont:
and the houses there so cleere clensed, that honest women may dwell there without any dread of the whip and the carte: and I finde that the altitude of that place and of Shordich are all one elevated, and 2 degrees, and under the zenith or vertical point of Venus, which presageth that sundry sorts of men and women shall be there resident: some shalbe so short heeld & so queffe stomackt that they shal ly in their beds while noon, by which means they shal grow so ful of grosse humors, that they shalbe troubled with strange timpanies & swellings in their bellies, incurable for fortye weekes vntill they be helped by the aduice of some skilfull Midwife.

Besides, other of the same sex and faction, shall learn to cozin young nouices, and fetch in young Gentlemen, to the great ouerthrow of youth, if some sharpe and speedye redresse be not fetcht from the worshipfull Colledge of the Phisitians in the parrish of S. Brides. But heere by the waye gentle Reader, note that this Eclipse sheweth, that this yeer shall be some strange birthes of Children produced in some monstrous forme, to the greefe of the Parentes, and fearfull spectacle of the beholders: but because the Eclipse chaunsfeth Southerlye, it is little to be feared that the effectes shall fail in England: yet somewhat it is to bee doubted, that diuers Children shall be borne, that
when they come to age shall not knowe their owne Fathers: others shall haue their fingers of [t]he nature of Lyme twigges, to get most parte of their liueing with fiue and a reache: some shall be born with feet like vnto Hares, that they shal run so swift, that they shall never tarry with maister, but trudge from poste to piller, till they take vp beggars bush for their lodging: Others shall haue Noses like Swine, that there shall not be a feast within a myle, but they shall smell it out: But especiallye it is to be doubted, that diuers women this yeere shall bee borne with two tungs, to the terrible greefe of such as shall marry them, uttering/in their furye such rough caft eloquence, that knaue and slaue shalbe but holyday woords to their husbands. And whereas this fearefull Eclipse dooth continue but an houre and a halfe, it signifieth that this yeere womens loue to their husbands shall be very shorte, some so momentarye, that it shall scarce continue from the Church doore to the wedding house: and that Hennes, Capons, Geefe, and other pullin shall little haunt poore mens tables, but flye awaye with spittes in their bellies to fette Churllses houses, that pamper themselfues vp with delicates and dainties: although very fewe other effectes are to be prognosticated, yet let me giue this caueat to my Countrymen, as a clause to this wonderfull Eclipse. Let such as
haue clothes enow, keep themselfes warme from taking of colde: and I would wishe rich men all this winter to fit by a good fire, and hardlye to goe to bed without a Cuppe of Sack, and that so qualified with Suger, that they proue not rew-matick: let them feede daintye and take eafe enough, and no doubt according to the judgement of Albumazar, they are like to liue as long as they can, and not to dye one hower before their time.

Thus much for this strange Eclipse of the Sunne.
Of the second Eclipse of the Moone, which is like to fall out when it chaunseth either before the 31. of December or els not at all, this present yeere.

1591.

The second Eclipse of the Moon shalbe but little seene in England, wherevpon the effectes shalbe nothing prejuditiall to our clyme: yet as the bodye of the Moone is neuer obscure in part or in whole, but some dangerous euents doo followe: so I meane to set downe brefely what is to be looke for in these westerne partes of the worlde.

First therefore it is to bee feared, that the Danes shal this yeere bee greatly giuen to drincke, insomuch that English Beere shal there be woorth fiue pence a stoape, that their Hoffs and tappe houses shal be more frequented, then the Parishe Churches, and many shal haue more Spruce Beere in their bellies, then wit in their
heads: wherupon shall growe Apoplexies and colde palfies in their legges, that they shall divers times not bee able to stand on their feete. Upon this shall growe great commoditye to the Potters and Glasse makers, for it is like there shall be a great overthrowe of them, if there bee not come act made for drinking in Jacke Jackes. But if the weather prooue faisonable, and the Harveft great, and the Barnes full of Corne: Rye is like to be cheap in Denmarke, and bread to be of a reasonable size, for the relieuing of the poore. Mary, Fraunce is like to have a great dearth of honest men, if the king preuaile not against these mutenous Rebelles of the League, and Papists in divers places to be plentye, if God or the King rout them not out with a sharpe overthrow: But this hope we have against that rascall rabble of those shuelings, that there was found in an olde booke this Prophecie spoken about Jerusalem long since by a Jew: The tree that God hath not planted shall be pulled vp by the roots: some curious Astronomers of late dayes that are more Propheticall then Juditiall, affirm that Martin the kill-hog for his devout drincking (by the Pope canonized a Saint) shall rise againe in the apparell of a Minister, and tickle some of the baser forte with such lusty humors in their braines, that / divers selfe con-
ceited fooles shal become his disciples, and grounding their witlesse opinion on an hereticall foundation, shall seeke to ruinate authoritie, and peruer all good orders establishe in the Church, to the great preiudice of vnity and religion, tituling theselues by the names of Martinistes, as the Donatists grew from Donates: were it not that the Moone being in Taurus, which gouernes the neck and throat, shewes that the Squinancie shal raigne amongst them, and diuers for want of breath dye of the strangling. Now for that Capricornus is a signe wherein Luna is often resident, it prognosticateth a great death amongst hornde beasts. The Butchers shall commit wilfull murther vpon Sheepe and Oxen, and diuers Keepers kill store of Buckes, and referue no other fees to their selues but the hornes, info-muche that if the Person of Horne-Church in Essex take not heede, there maye hap to prooue this yeere some Cuckoldes in his Parrish.

But there is like to bee concluded by an act set downe in Graues ende Barge, that hee that wypes his Nose and hath it not, shall forfeite his whole face, and that all such as are jealous ouer their wiues without cause, are worthie to bee punisht with the horne plague for their labour. And whereas this Eclipse is farre from the signe Pisces, it shewes that there shal bee
much stinking fish this yere at Billings gate, and that Quinborowe oyster boates shall ofte times carry knaues as wel as honest men: but let the Fish-wiues take heed, for if most of them proue not scoldes, yet because Pisces is a signe that gouernes the feete, they shall weare out more shooes in Lent then in anie two months beside through the whole yere, and get their liuing by walking and crying, because they flaundered Ram alley with such a tragical infamie. The rest I conceive as friuolous, and little necessarie to be touched in this Prognostication.

A declaration of the generall disposition of sundrie conceited qualities incident unto mens mindes & natures throughout these foure quarters of the yere, by the merrie influence of the Planets, with some other tragical euents and observations worthie the noting, contayned vnder each seperated revolution.

And first of the inclination of the Winter quarter.

Winter / the first Astronomicall quarter of the yeare, according to my vsuall account, whatsoever Ptolomie says, beginneth sooner with poore men than with rich, graunted so by the malignant influence of Saturne, whose constellation is that suche as haue no money nor credit, shall want
coles & woode, and be faine to stand and starue for colde, while olde pennifathers fit and waft them felues by the fire. The winter beginning at that instant, when the Sunne makes his en
traunce into the first degree of Capricornus, that Hiemall folfticiall signe shewes that by naturall inclination this quarter is generally fleugmatike, and that all shall be of suche great authoritie, that the Bakers Basket shall giue the wall vnto the Brewers Barrell, and a halfe pen nye drie doe homage vnto a halfe pen nye wet. The weather and feason being so colde that diuerse for feare of the froft shall sit all daye at Tables and Cardes, while their poore wiues and families faft at home for their follies. And in respect that I finde three of the seauen Planetes to be in waterie signes as Juppiter, Mars, and the Moone, it signifieth that diuerse persons both men and women for want of wine or strong drinke shall goe to bedde sober against their willes. That Sea-faring men shall haue ill lucke if either their shippes hit agaynst rockes or sticke in the fandes, that there shall bee such great hoarie frostes, that men and women shall creepe to bedde together, and some of them lie so long till they bee fetchte out with a Bafon. Heere Saturne retrograde in Gemini, shewes that there shall this Winter fall such great fogs and mistes, that diuerse riche men shall loose their
purses by the high waie side, and poore men be so weather beaten by the crafte of vfurers, that they shall begge their bread by the extremitie of such extortion: but Mercurie and Venus being congregated in Sagitarie, prognosticateth that for want of faire weather, such as haue but one shirt shall go woolward till that be a washing, and that water-men that want fares shall sit and blowe their fingers till theyr fellowes row betwixte the old Swanne and Westminster. And by reason that Mars that malignant Planet, hath nothing to doe in that Hiemall reuolution, fouldiers this Winter for the moft parte, shall lie still in garrifons, and shall not be troubled with more monie than is necessarie. Beeing also greatly to bee feared, that through the extreme colde diuerse poore men shall die at riche mennes doores: pittie shall bee exiled, good woorkes trufl ouer the sea with Jacke / a lent and Hospitalitie banisht as a signe of popish reli-
gion: and were it not that some moist shoures shal moderate the hardnes of the froft, Charitie shoulel for want of house roome lie and freeze to death in the streets: diuerse great stormes are this yere to be feared, especially in houses where the wiues weare the breeches, with such lowde windes, that the women shall scold their husbandes quight out of doores, wherevpon is like to fall great haile-
tones as bigge as ioynd flooles, that some shall
A PROGNOSTICATION.

haue their heads broken: and all through the froward disposition of Venus. But Mars comes in and playes the man, who beeing placed in Gemini, that gouerns armes and shoulders, presageth that sundrie tall fellowes shall take heart at grasse, who armed with good cudgels, shall so lambeake these stubborne hufwiues, that the wind shall turne into another quarter, and so the weather waxe more calme and quiet. Such greate floudes are like to infue, through this Hiemall distemperature, that diuerse men shall be drowned on drie hilles, and fishe if they could not swimme, were ytterly like to perish. Eeles are like to bee deere if there bee few or none taken, and plentie of poutes to bee had in all places, especiallie in those coastes and Countries where weomen haue/ not their owne willes. Nowe Gentle Reader in respect of diuerse particular circumstances, drawne from the daily motions, progressions, stations, retrogradations, aspects, and other appontmentes of fixed and wandring stars, I am induced to set downe that such as haue no fire, shall feele most cold, and that wierdrawers, if they plye not their worke, shall feele no great heate, that they in Ruffia shall suffer more prejudice by the sharpenesse of Winter than the Spaniards: and yet one thing is to bee hoped for at the handes of Mercurie, that this winter mony shall haue
a fall, for Philip and Mary shillings that heretofore went for 12d. shall now passe from man to man for 6d. a pence.

The distemperance of this quarter, is like to breede many sickenesses and sundrie diseases as well in young as in old, proceeding either of corrupt and vicious bloud or of superabundance of crude and raw fleugmatike humors. As Cephalalgies or paines in the head, which shall make men dizzy that some shall stagger & stumble vp & downe the streetes till they haue stolne a nappe to quiet their braines. Ach in the shoulders shall raine amongsti divers women that haue shrewes to their husbands, and divers drunken men shall be pestered with surfets. Maidens this winter shall haue strange stitches & gripings / of the collicke, which diseases proceed by too much lying vprright: and men shall be troubled with such paine in the eies, that they shall not know their owne wives from other women, with coughs, rumes, and itchings, which I omit.

*Of the Spring time.*

Winter being finisht with the last grade of the watry signe Pisces, at the Suns joyful progresse into the first degree of Aries. The second quarter of our usuall yere commonly called the spring cōmeth next, which beginneth when graffe begins
to sproute, & trees to bud. But to treat of this present season, forasmuch as I find the planets to be contradictorily disposed, in signs & manstos of diverse & repugnant qualities, I gather that this spring will be very ill for schollers, for they shall study much and gain little, they shall have more wit in their heads then money in their purses, dunces shall prove more welthie then divers doctors, insomuch that sundrie vnlettered foolies should creep into the ministerie, if the prouident care of good Bishops did not preuent the. And by the opinion of Proclus, women are like to grow wilful, & so variable, that they shall laugh & weep, and all with a winde: Butchers shall sell their meate as deare as they can, and if they be not carefull, horne beastes shall bee hurtfull vnto them, and some shall bee so wedded to swines flesh, that they shall never be without a fowle in their house as long as they liue. This spring, or vernall resolution being naturally hot and moist, is like to be verie forarde for sprouting fieldes and blooming trees, and because Saturne is in his proper mansion, olde men are like to bee froward, and craftie knaues shall neede no Brokers, vnurie shalbe called good husbandrie, and men shalbe counted honest by their wealth, not by their vertues. And because Aquarius has somthing to do w this quarter, it
is to be doubted that divers springs of water will rise vp in vintners fellers, to the great weakning of their Gascon wine, & the utter ruine of the ancient order of the redde noses. March Beere shalbe more esteemed than smal Ale.

Out of the old flocke of hereisie, this spring it is to be feared, will bloome new scismaticall opinions and strange sects, as Brownists, Barowists, & such balductum deuises, to the great hinderance of the vnitie of the Church, & confusion of the true fath, if the learned doctor sir T. Tiburne be not taflkte to confute such vpstart companions, with his plain & dunstable philosophie. Cancer is bu/sie in this springtide, and therefore it is like that florishing bloomes of yong gentlemens youth, shalbe greatly anoide with caterpillers, who shall intangle them in such statutes & recognances, that they shall crie out against brokers, as Jeremy did against false prophets. Besides, thogh this last winter nipt vp divers masterles men & cut purses, yet this spring is like to afford one every tearme this ten yere in Weftminster hall: Barbers if they haue no worke are like to grow poore, and for that Mercury is cobust and many quarelles like to growe amongst men, lawiers shall prove rich & weare side gowns and large consciences, hauing theyr mouths open to call for fees, and theyr purses shut when they shoulde bestowe almes.
But take heed O you generation of wicked Oftlers, thatsteale haie in the night from gentlemens horses, and rub their teth with tallow, that they may eate little when they stand at liuery, this I prognosticate against you, that this spring, which so euer of you dies, shall leave a knaues carcasse in the graue behind him, and that they which liue shall hop a harlot in his clothes all the yere after. But abuse all let me not hide this secret from my countrymen, that Jupiter being in aspect with Luna, discouereth that divers men shall drinke more the they bleed, & Tailers shall steale nothing but what is brought vnto them, that poulters shall bee pestered with rotten egs, & Butchers dogs make libels against Lent, that affoordes no foode but herring cobs for their diet.

Diseases incident to this quarter, as by Astrological & philosophicall conjectures I can gather, are these following: Prentifes that have ben fore beaten, shall be troubled with ach in their armes, and it shall be ill for such as haue fore eies, to looke against the Sun. The plague shall raigne mortally amongst poore men, that divers of them shall not be able to change a man a groate. Olde women that haue taken great colde, may perhaps be trobled with the cough, and such as haue paine in their teeth, shall bee
grievoufli troubled with the tooth ach. Befide, ficke folke fhall haue worfe stomackes then they which be whole, and men that cannot fleepe, fhall take verie little reft: with other accidentall infirmities, which I doe ouerpaft.

A declaration of the disposition and inclination of the Summer quarter.

When the Sunne hath made his course through the vernal signs, Aries, Taurus & Gemini at his paffage vnto the folficiall effiuall signe Cancer. The third parte of an English yeere called Summer, taketh his beginning this yere: as Ptolomie fayth, the twelfth of June, but as my skill doth conjecture, it beginneth when the wether waxeth fo hot, that beggers fcorne barnes and lie in the field for heate and the wormes of Saint Pancredge Church build their bowers vnder the shadow of Colman hedge. The predominant qualities of this quarter is heate and dryness, whereby I doe gather, that through the influence of Cancer, bottle Ale fhall be in great authoritie, and wheat fhall doe knightes feruice vnto malte. Tapfters this quarter fhall be in greater credite than Coblers, and many fhall drinke more then they can yearne. And yet because Mercurie is a signe that is nowe predominant, women fhall be more troubled with fleas then men, and fuch as want
meate shall goe supperlesse to bedde. Besides, this quarter great hurlie burlies are like to bee feared, and greate stratagems like to bee performed, thorough the opposition of Mars and Saturne: for Butchers are like to make great hauocke amongest flies, and beggers on Sunne shine dayes to commit great murthers vpon their rebellious vermine, and the knights of Coppersmiths hap to / doo great deedes of armes vpon Cuppes, Cannes, pots, glasse, and black iacks: not ceasing the skirmish til they are able to stand on their legges.

Further it is to bee doubted, that because Venus is in the house of Loue, that Millers, Weauers, and Taylors shall be counted as theeuifhe as they are knauifhe: and Maides this quarter shall make fillyebubbes for their Louers, till some of them Calue with the Cowe for companye. But Jupiter in his exaltation presageth, that divers young Gentlemen shall creepe further into the Mercers Booke in a Moneth, then they can get out in a yere: and that sundry fellowes in their filkes shall be appointed to keep Duke Humfrye company in Poules, because they know not wher to get their dinner abroad: if there be great plenty of Cherries this Summer, they are like to come to a penny the pound, and Costardmongers this Summer shall be licenst by the Wardens of their hall, to weare and
carry baskets of Apples on their heads to keepe them from the heat of the Sun. But Libra aduelt and retrograde, foretelleth that there is like to be a league between diuers bakers & the pillorye, for making their bread so light, and the Sun shall be so hotte, that it shall melt awaye the consciences of diuers couetous men, and that / by the meanses of Venus which is in the house of Scorpion, women shall bee so loue sicke, that Sumners and ciuil lawiers shall haue great fees thorough the abundance of such sinfull clients, and diuerse spirites in white sheetes shall stand in Poules and other Churches, to make their confessions. But this by the waie learne of me, shomakers shall proue so proud, that they shall refuse the name of souters, and the Tailer and the loufe are like to fall at martiall variance, were it not the worshipfull company of the Botchers haue set downe this order, that he that lies in his bed while his clothes be mending, neede not haue a man to keepe his wardroppe. But amongst all, the Smithes haue put vp a supplication to the Alecunners, that he which goes dronke to bed, and as soone as hee wakes dares not carouse a hartie draught the next morning, shall drinke two daies together small Ale for his penance.

This variable seafon is like to bring variable accidents, for diuerse diseases which will much
moleft the people, namely the plurifies which shall grieue many, that they shall haue farre more knauerie than they haue honestie, diuerse fluxes, and especiallie in poore mens purses, for they shall bee so laxatiue, that money shall runne out faster then they can get it. The small pockes among children and great amongst men, inifirmities in the tong, some shall doe nothing but lie with others, which I let pas.

A declaration of the inclination and disposition of the Autumnall or harueft quarter.

Harueft and the laft quarter of this yeere beginneth, as I coniecture, when corne is ripe. But for the nature of this autumnall resolution, because it beginneth in Libra I gather there shall be more holes open this quarter then in all the yeere beside, and strange euents shall chance, for knauers shall weare smockes, and women shall haue holes in their heartes, that as faft as loue creepes in at one, it shall runne out at another. Yet Leo being a fire signe, foresheweth that diuerse men shall haue their teeth longer then their beards, and some shal be so Sun burnt with fitting in the Alehouse, that their noses shall bee able to light a candle. Others shall for want of money paune their clokes, and march mannerly in their
doublet and their hose. And some shall this yere have barnes and yet want corn to put in them. Rie this yere shall bee common in England, and knaues shall be licenst to sel it by the pound, and he that wil not this quarter spend a pennie with his friende, by the counsayle of Albumazar, shall bee thrift quite out of all good companie for his labour.

It may be doubted that some straunge sicknesse and vnknownen diseases wil happen, as hollownesse of the heart, that a man shall not know a knaue from an honest man, and vncouth consumptions of the lyuer, that diuerse men of good wealth shall by their kinde hearts spend all and die banquerouts: some shal be troubled with diseases in the throte, which cannot bee helpte without Bull the hang man plaie the skilfull Chyrurgion. Amongest the rest, many that have faire wiues shalbe troubled with greate swelling in the browes, a disease as incurable as the goute. Some shall bee troubled with the stone, and seeke to cunning women to cure them of that disease, an infirmitie easilie amended, and the doctors of Bridewell did not punish such women Phisitians by a Statute. But the greatest disease that is to be feared, is the Cataphalusie, that is to saie, good fellowes this yere for want of money shall oft times be contented to part companie.
A PROGNOSTICATION.

And / thus (gentle reader) thou haft my pro-
gnostication, gathered by arte, and confir-
med by experience, and therefore take it
in good worth, for *Quod græ-
tis grate*, and so
farewell.

FINIS.
VIII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

ii. Strange Newes, etc.

1593.
NOTE.

Mr. J. Payne Collier's reprint of "Strange Newes" (1592-3) swarms with errors. His Copyist must have served him unusually badly. Our exemplar is from the Huth Library: 45 leaves unpaged, A 2—M 2.—G.
Strange Newes,
Of the intercepting certaine Letters, and a Convoys of Verfls, as they were going Privilige to victuall the Low Countries.

Vnda impellitur vnda.

By Tho. Nashe, Gentleman.

Printed at London by John Danter, dwelling in Hosier-Lane neere Holburne Conduit, 1593.
To the most copious Carminist
of our time, and famous persecutor of Priscian his
verie friend Maifter Apis lapis: Tho. Nash wish-
eth new strings to his old tawnie Purfe, and
all honourable increafe of acquaint-
tance in the Cellar.

GENTLE M. William, that learned writer
Rhenifh wine & Sugar, in the first booke
of his Comment upon Red-noses, hath this
saying: veterem ferendo iniuriam inuitas nouam,
which is as much in English, as one Cuppe of nipi-
taty puls on another. In moyft consideration whereof,
as also in zealous regard of that high countenance
you shew unto Schollers, I am bolde, in steade of new
wine, to carowfe to you a cuppe of newes: which if
your worship (according to your wonted Chaucerifme)
shall accept in good part, Ile be your daily Orator
to pray, that that pure sanguine complexion of yours
may never be famisht with potte-lucke, that you may
taft till your laft gaspe, and looe to see the confusion
of both your speciall enemies, Small Beere and Gram-
mer rules.

It is not unknowledge to report, what a famous potle-
pot Patron you haue beene to olde Poets in your daies,
& how many pounds you haue spent (and, as it were,
thrown into the fire) upon the durt of wisedome
called Alcumie: Yea, | you are such an infinite
Mecenas to learned men, that there is not that
morsell of meat they can carue you, but you will eate
for their sakes, and accept very thankefully. Thinke
not, though under correction of your boone-companion-
ship, I am dispoed to be a little pleasant, I condemne
you of anie immoderation either in eating or drinking,
for I know your gournement and carriage to bee every
way Canonical. Verilie, verilie, all poore Schollers
acknowledge you as their patron, prouiditore, and
supporter, for there cannot a threedbare Cloake sooner
peepe forth, but you brat presse it to bee an out-
brother of your bountie: three decayed Students you
kept attending vpon you a long time.

Shall I presume to dilate of the grauitie of your
round cap, and your dudgion dagger? It is thought
they wil make you be cald vpon shortly to bee Alder-
man of the Stilliard. And thats well rememberd:  
I heard saie, when this last Terme was removed to
Hartford, you fell into a greate studie and care by
your selfe, to what place the Stilliard should be re-
mooued. I promise you truelie it was a deepe medi-
tation, & such as might well have beseeemed Eldertons parliament of noxes to have sit upon.

A tauerne in London, onlie upon the motion, mourned al in blacke, and forbare to girt hir temples with iuie, because the grandame of good fellowship was like to depart from among them. And I wonder verie much, that you lampfound not your selfe into a consumption with the profound cogitation of it.

Diu viuas in amore iocisque, whatsoever you do, beware of keeping diet. Sloth is a sinne, and one sinne (as one poijon) must be expelled with another. What can he doe better that hath nothing to do, than fal a drinking to keep him from idleness? Fah, me thinks my ieafts begin alreadie to smell of the caske, with talking so much of this liquid prouinder.

In earnest thus; There is a Doctor and his Fart that haue kept a foule stinking styrre in Paules Churchyard; I crie him mercie, I flaudred him, he is scarfe a Doctor till he hath done his Acts: this dodipoule, this didopper, this professed poetical braggar hath raild upon me, without wit or art, in certaine foure penniworth of Letters and three farthing-worth of Sonnets; nor do I meane to present him and Shakerley to the Queens foole-taker for coatch-horse: for two that draw more equallie in one Oratoriall yoke of vaine-glorie, there is not under heauen.

N. II. 12
What saie you, Maister Apis lapis, will you with your eloquence and credit shield me from carpers? Haue you anie odde shreds of Latine to make this letter-munger a cockfscombe of?

It standes you in hande to arme your selfe against him; for he speaks against Connicatchers, and you are a Connicatcher, as Connicatching is divided into three parts, the Verfer, the Setter, and the Barnacle.

A Setter I am sure you are not; for you are no Musitian: nor a Barnacle; for you neuer were of the order of the Barnardines: but the Verfer I cannot acquite you of, for M. Vaux of Lambeth brings in fore evidence of a breakefaft you wonne of him one morning at an unlawfull game cald rimming. What lies not in you to amend, plaie the Docthor and defend.

A fellow that I am to talke with by and by, being told that his Father was a Rope-maker, excused the matter after this sort; And hath neuer faint had reprobate to his Father? They are his owne wordes, hee cannot goe from / them. You see heere hee makes a Reprobate and a Ropemaker voces convertibles. Go too, take example by him to wash out durt with inke, and run vp to the knees in the channell, if you bee once wetshed. You are amongst graue Doctors, and men of judgement in both Lawes every daie: I pray, aske them the queftion in my abfence, whether
such a man as I haue describ'd this Epiftler to be, one that hath a good handsome pickerdeuant, and a prettie leg to studie the Civill Law with, that hath made many proper rimes of the olde cut in his daies, and deferved infinitely of the state by extolling himselfe and his two brothers in euery booke he writes: whether (I faie) such a famous piller of the Presse, now in the fourteenth or fifteenth yeare of the raigne of his Rhetorike, giuing mony to haue this his illiterat Pamphlet of Letters printed (whereas others haue monie giuen them to suffer themselues to come in Print) it is not to bee counted as flat jimonie, and be liable to one and the same penaltie?

I tell you, I meane to trounce him after twentie in the hundred, and haue a bout with him with two staues and a pike for this geare.

If he get any thing by the bargaine, lette whatsoeuer I write hence-forward bee condemned to wrappe bumbaft in.

Carouse to me good lucke, for I am resolutely bent; the best bloud of the brothers shal pledge me in vineger. O would thou hadst a quaffing boule, which, like Gawens scull, should containe a pecke, that thou mightst swappe off a hartie draught to the succeffe of this voyage.

By whatsoeuer thy visage holdeth most pretious I beseech thee, by Iohn Dauies soule, and the blew Bore in the Spittle, I coniure thee, to draw out thy purse,
and give me nothing / for the dedication of my Pam-
phlet.

Thou art a good fellow I know, and hadst rather
spend ieafts than monie. Let it be the tafke of thy
beft tearmes, to safecondu& this booke through the
enemies countrey.

Proceede to cherish thy furpassing carminicall arte
of memorie with full cuppes (as thou doft): let
Chaucer bee new fchourd against the day of battaile,
and Terence come but in nowe and then with the
snuffe of a fentence, and Dictum puta, Weele strike
it as dead as a doore naile; Haud teruntii elfimo.
We haue cattes meate and dogges meate inough for
these mungrels. However I write merrilie, I love
and admire thy pleasant wittie humor, which no care
or crosse can make vnconuerfable. Stil bee constant
to thy content, love poetry, hate pedantifme. Vade,
vale, caue ne titubes, mandataq; frangas.

Thine intirely,

Tho. Nafhe.
To the Gentlemen Readers.

GENTLEMEN, the strong fayth you haue conceiu’d, that I would do workes of supererrogation in answering the Doctor, hath made mee to breake my daye with other important busines I had, and stand darting of quils a while like the Porpentine.

I know there want not welwillers to my disgrace, who say my onely Muse is contention; and other, that with Tiberius Caesar pretending to see in the darke, talke of strange obieætes by them discouered in the night, when in truth they are nothing else but the glimmering of their eies.

I will not holde the candle to the Deuill, vnmaske my holiday Muse to enuiue; but if any such deepe insighted detræcter will challenge mee to whatsoeuer quiet aduenture of Art, wherein he thinkes mee leaft conuersant, hee shall finde that I am Tam Mercurio quàm Marti, a Scholler in some thing else but contention.

If idle wittes will needes tye knottes on smooth bulrushes with their tongues, faith, the worlde
might thinke I had little to attend, if I should goe about to vnloose them with my penne.

I cannot tell how it comes to passe, but in these ill eide daies of ours, euery man delights with Ixion to beget children of clouds, digge for Pearles in dunghils, and wreft oyle out of iron.

Poore Pierce Pennileffe haue they turnd to a conjuring booke, for there is not that line in it, with which they doo not seeke to raiſe vp a Ghoſt, and, like the hog that converters theſt part of his meate into briftels, fo haue they converted fixe parts of my booke into bitterness.

Aretine, in a Commedie of his, witty complaіneth that vpſtart Commenters, with their Annotations and gloſſes, had extorted that ſense and Morall out of Petrarch, which if Petrarch were aliue, a hundred Strappadoes might not make him confesſe or ſubſcribe too; So may I complaine that rash heads, vpſtart Interpreters, haue extorted & rakte that vnreuerent meaning out of my lines, which a thousand deaths cannot make mee ere grant that I dreamd off.

To them that are abused by their owne iealous collections, and no determined trespaſſe of mine, this aduice, by the way of example, will I giue.

One comming to Doctour Perne on a time, and telling him that hee was miserably raild on ſuch a day in a Sermon in Saint Maries in Cam-
bridge, I but quoth he, (in his puling manner of speaking) did he name me, did he name me? I warrant you, goe and aske him, and hee will say he meant not mee; So they that are vn-groundedly offended at any thing in Pierce Pen-nileffe, first let them looke if I did name them; if not, but the matter hangeth in suspence, let them fend to mee for my exposition, and not buy it at the seconde hand, and I doe not doubt but they will be throughly satisfied.

Hee / that wraps himselfe in earth, like the Foxe, to catch birds, may haps haue a heavy cart go other him before he be aware, and breake his backe.

A number of Apes may get the glowworme in the night and thinke to kindle fire with it, because it glisters so, but, God wote, they are beguiled, it proves in the end to be but fools fire: the poore worme alone with their blowing warmed, they starud for colde whiles their wood is vntoucht. Who but a Foppe wil labour to anatomize a Flye? Fables were free for any bondman to speake in old time, as Æsop for an instance: their allusion was not restrained to any particular humor of spite, but generally applied to a generall vice. Now a man may not talke of a dog, but it is surmisfed he aimes at him that giueth the dog in his Crest: hee cannot name
straw, but hee must plucke a wheate sheaffe in
pieces, *Intelligendo faciunt vt nihil intelligent.*

What euer they be that thus persecute Art
(as the Alcumifts are said to persecute Nature) I
would wish them to abate the edge of their wit,
and not grinde their colours so harde: hauing
founde that which is blacke, let them not, with
our forenamed Gold-falsifiers, seeke for a subftance
that is blacker than black, or angle for frogs in
a cleare fountaine.

From the admonition of these vncurteous mis-
confterers, I come to *The kilcow champion of the
three brethren*; hee forfooth wil be the firt that
shal giue *Pierce Penileffe a non placet.*

It is not inough that hee bepift his credite,
about twelve yeeres ago, with *Three proper and
wittie familiar letters,* but ftil he muft be running
on the *letter,* and abufing the Queenes English
without pittie or mercie.

Bee / it knowne vnto you (Christian Readers)
this man is a forestaller of the market of fame,
an ingroffer of glorie, a mountebanke of ftrange
wordes, a meere marchant of babies and conny-
skins.

Hold vp thy hand, G. H., thou art heere
indited for an incrocher vpon the fee-fimple of
the Latin, an enemie to Carriers, as one that takes
their occupation out of their hands, and doft
nothing but transport letters vp and downe in thy owne commendation, a conspiratour and practiser to make Printers rich, by making thyselfe ridiculous, a manifest briber of Bookesellers and Stationers, to helpe thee to fell away thy bookes (whose impression thou paidst for) that thou mayst haue money to goe home to Trinitie Hall to discharge thy commons.

I say no more but Lord haue mercie vpon thee, for thou art falne into his hands that will plague thee.

Gentlemen, will you be instructed in the quarrell that hath causd him lay about him with his penne and incke horne so couragiously? About two yeeres since (a fatall time to familiar Epiftles) a certayne Theologicall gimpanado, a demie diuine, no higher than a Tailors pressing iron, brother to this huge booke-beare, that writes himselfe One of the Emperour Iustinians Courtiers, tooke vppon him to fet his foote to mine, and ouer crow mee with comparatiue tearmes. I protest I neuer turnd vp any cowsheard to looke for this scarabe flye. I had no conceit as then of discovering a breed of fooles in the three brothers bookes: marry, when I beheld ordinance planted on edge of the pulpit against me, & that there was no remedy but the blind Vicar would needs let flie at me with his Churchdore keies, & curse me with bel, book and
candle, because in my Alphabet of Idiots I had ouer / skipt the Hs, what could I doe but draw vppon him with my penne, and defende my selfe with it and a paper buckler as well as I might.

Say, I am as verie a Turke as hee that three yeeres ago ranne vpon ropes, if euer I speld eyther his or anie of his kindreds name in reproch, before hee barkt against mee as one of the enemies of the Lambe of God, and fetcht allusions out of the Buttery to debase mee.

Heere beginneth the fray. I vpbraied godly predication with his wicked conuersation, I squirt inke into his decayed eyes with iniquitie to mend their diseased sight, that they may a little better descend into my schollership and learning. The Ecclesiasticall duns, instead of recovery, waxeth starker blind thereby (as a preferuative to some, is poyson to others): hee gets an olde Fencer, his brother, to be reuenged on me for my Phificke; who, flourishing about my eares with his two hand sworde of Oratory and Poetry, peraduenture shakes some of the ruff of it on my shoulders, but otherwise strikes mee not but with the shadowe of it, which is no more than a flappe with the false scabberd of contumelie: whether am I in this case to arme my selfe against his intent of injurie, or sitte still with my finger in my mouth, in hope to bee one of simplicities martyrs?
A quest of honorable minded Cauailers go vppon it, and if they shall find by the Law of armes or of ale, that I, beeing first prouokt, am to bee inioynde to the peace, or be sworne true servant to cowardize & patience, when wrong presieth mee to the warres; then will I bind my selfe prentise to a Cobler, and freth vnderlay all those writings of mine that haue trodde awrie.

Be aduertised (gentle audience) that the Doctors proceedings haue thrust vppon mee this sowterly Metaphor, who, first contributing his confutation in a short Pamphlet of fix leaues, like a paire of summer pumps: afterward (winter growing on) clapt a paire of double soales on it like a good husband, added eight sheets more, and prickt those sheets or soales, as full of the hob-nayles of repre- sion as they could fticke.

It is not those his new clowted startops iwis, that shall carry him out of the durt.

Sweet Gentlemen, be but indifferent, and you shal see me desperate. Heere lies my hatte, and there my cloake, to which I resemle my two Epiftles, being the vpper garments of my booke, as the other of my body: Saint Fame for mee, and thus I runne vpnon him.

Tho. Naſhe.
The foure Letters Confuted.

ABRIEL, and not onely Gabriel, but Gabriellisime Gabriel, no Angell but Angelos, id est, Nuntius, a Fawninguest Messenger twixt Maister Bird and Maister Demetrius: Behold, here stands he that will make it good, on thy foure Letters bodie, that thou art a filthy vaine foole. Thy booke I commend; as very well printed: and like wondrous well, because all men dislike it.

I agree with thee that there are in it some matters of note, for there are a great many bare-foote rimes in it, that goe as iumpe as a Fiddle, with euery ballet-makers note: and if according to their manner, you had tun'd them ouer the head, it had beene nere the worfe, for by that meanes you might haue had your name chaunted in euery corner of the streete, then the which there can be nothing more melodiouslie addoulce to
your deuine Entelechy. O they would haue trowld off brauely to the tune of O man in Desperation, and, like Marenzos Madrigals, the mournefull note naturally haue affectedom the miserable Dittie.

Doe you knowe your owne misbegotten bodgery Entelechy / and addoulce? With these two Hermophrodite phraſes, being halfe Latin and halfe English, haft thou puld out the very guts of the inkehorne.

LETTERS.

To all curteous mindes that will vouchſafe the reading.

Comment.

In their abſence, this be deliuered to Megge Curtis in Shorditch, to stop muſtard pots with.

The particular Contents.

L. A Praſface to courteous mindes.

C. As much to say as Praſface, much good do it you, would it were better for you.

L. A Letter to M. Emanuel Demetrius, with a sonnet thereto annexed.

C. That is, as it were a purgation vpon a vomit, buſkins vpon pantophles.

L. A Letter to M. Bird.

C. Or little matter wrapt vp in many words.

L. A Letter to euerie favorable and indifferent Reader.
C. *Id est*, An exhortation to all Readers, that they shall read nothing but his works.

L. *Another letter to the fame, extorted after the rest.*

C. By interpretation, a Letter whereof his invention had a hard stoole, and yet it was for his ease, though not for his honestie: and so forth, as the Text shall direct you at large.

Heere / beginneth the first Epistle and first Booke of *Orator Gabriell to the Catilinaries or Philippicks.* Wherein is diuulged that venum is venum and will infect, that that which is done cannot (de facto) be undone, that fauour is a curteous Reader, and G. H. your thankfull debter.

*A Comment vpon the Text.*

The learned Orator in this Epistle *taketh precise order* he will not be too eloquent, and yet it shall be (1) as well for enditing unworthie to be published, as for publishing unworthie to be endited.

C. He had many aduersaries in those times that he wrote, amongst the which Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches (his fathers pouerty, and his owne pride, were none of the meanest).

After them start up one *Pierce Pennileffe,* and
hee likewise was a stumbling blocke in his way. (Penurie not long tarries after pride; pray all the ropes in Saffron Walden that I do not prophesie). Amen, Amen, quoth M. Bird and M. Demetrius.

Hee forbeares to speake much in this place of the one or the other, because his letters are more forward to accuse them than their owne books to condemn them; yet for a touch by the way, hee talks that Greene is no liuerey / for this winter, it is pitifully blasted and faded in euerie meade, by the strong breath of his barbarifme.

Hee hath a twitch at Pierce Pennileffe too, at the partingstile, and tearms him the Deuils Orator by profession, and his Dames Poet by practife: wherein mee thinks (the surreuerence of his works not impaired) he hath verie highly overshotte himselfe: for no more is Pierce Pennileffe to be cald the Deuils Orator for making a Supplication to the Deuill, than hee is to bee helde for a Rhethoritian, for setting forth Gabrielis Scuruei Rhetor, wherein hee thought to haue knockt out the braines of poore Tullies Orator, but in veritie did nothing else, but gather a flaunting vnfauory fore-horse nosegay out of his well furnished garland.

The advancement of the Deuils Oratorship, which he ascribeth to Pierce Pennileffe, me thinks had beene a fit place for his Doctorship, when hee mift
the Oratorship of the Universitie, of which in the sequele of his booke, he most slanderously complaineth. Doctor Perne, Greene, no dead man he spareth.

What he should subaudi by his Dames Poet, I scarce apprehend, except this, that Pierce his Father was Dame Laws[on's] Poet, and writte many goodly stories of her in An Almond for [a] Parrat.

Those that will take a Lecture in our Orators letters must not read, excuse, commend, credite or beleue any approoued truth in Pierce Pennilese, especially if it be anything that vplbraideth the great Baboune his brother.

Hee will stoppe the beginning, id est, when hee hath come behind a man and broke his head, seeke to bind him to the good abearing, or els the ende were like to prove pernicious and perillous to his confusion.

Some what hee mutters of defamation and iust commendation, & what a hell it is for him, that hath built his heauen in vaine-glory, to bee puld by the sleeue and bidde respice finem, looke backe to his Fathers house; but I overflippe it as friuolous, becaufe all the world knowes him better than he knowes himselfe, & though he play the Pharifie neuer so in iustifying his owne innocence, theres none will beleue him.

Let this bee spoken once for all, as I haue a
FOURE LETTERS

foule to faue, till this day in all my life, with tongue nor penne, did I euer in the leaft worde or tittle derogate from the Doctoor. If his brother (without any former prouocation on my part, God is my witnesse) rayld on me grossely, expresly namde mee, comparde me to Martin, indeuord to take from mee all estimation of Arte or witte, haue I not cause to beftirre mee?

Gabriell, I will beftirre mee, for all like an Alehoufe Knight, thou crau'ft of Justice to do thee reason; as for impudencie and calumny, I retorne them in thy face, that, in one booke of tenne sheets of paper, haue published aboue two hundred lies.

Had they beene wittie lies, or merry lies, they would never haue green'd mee: but palpable lies, damned lies, lies as big as one of the Guardes chynes of beefe, who can abide?

Ile make thee of my counfaile, because I loue thee (not): when I was in Cambridge, and but a childe, I was indifferently perswaded of thee: mee thought by thy apparell and thy gate, thou shouldest haue beeene a fine fellow: Little did I suspeect that thou wert brother to Io. Pasen (whom inwardly I alwaies grudgd at for writing against Aristotle) or any of the Hs of Hempehall, but a Causalier of a clean contrary house: now thou haft quite spoild thy selfe, from the foote to the head I can tell how thou art fashioned.
Teterrime frater, and not fraterrime frater, maist thou verie wofully exclaime, for in helping him, thou haft crackt thy credit through the ring, made thy infamie currant as farre as the Queenes coyne goes.

But it may be thou haft a fider cloke for this quarrell: thou wilt obiect, thy Father was abufd, & that made thee write. What, by mee, or Greene, or both?

If by Greene and not mee, thou shouldest haue written against Greene and not mee. If by both, I will answere for both, but not by both, therefore I will aunswere but for one.

Gieue an instancie, if thou canst for thy life, wherein in any leafe of Pierce Penileffe I had so much as halfe a fillables relation to thee, or offered one iot of indignitie to thy Father, more than naming the greatest dignitie he hath, when for varietie of Epithites, I calde thy brother the sonne of a Ropemaker.

We shall have a good sonne of you anone, if you be ashamed of your fathers occupation: ah thou wilt nere thrive, that art beholding to a trade, and canst not abide to heare of it.

Thou dost liue by the gallows, & wouldst not haue a shooe to put on thy foot, if thy father had no traffike with the hangman. Had I a Rope-maker to my father, & some body had casst it in
my teeth, I would forthwith haue writ in praife of Ropemakers, & prou'd it by fou'd sillogisty to be one of the 7 liberal sciences.

Somewhat I am priuie to the caufe of Greenes inueighing against the three brothers. Thy hot-spirited brother Richard (a notable ruffian with his pen) hauing first tooke vpon him in his blundring Persiual, to play the Iacke of both fides twixt Martin and vs, and snarld priuily at Pap-hatchet, Pafquill, & others, that oppofde themselves againft the open flaunder of that mightie platformer of Atheisme, prefently after dribbed forth another fooles bolt, a booke I shoulde say, which he chriftened The Lambe of God.

That booke was a learned booke, a labourd booke; for three yere before he put it in print, he had preacht it all without booke.

I my felfe haue some of it in a booke of Sermons that my Tutor at Cambridge made mee gather euery Sunday. Then being very yoong, I counted it the abiesteft and frothieft forme of Diuinitie that came in that place. Now more confirmed in age and Art, I confirme my ill opinion of it.

Neither do I vrge this, as if it were a hainous thing for a man to put fermons in print after hee preacht them, but obferue the proud humor of the pert Didimus, that thinks nothing he speakes but
deferues to be put in print, and speakes not that sentence in the Pulpit, which before he rough-hewes not ouer with his penne. Besides, I taxe him for turning an olde coate (like a Broker) and felling it for a new.

These and a thousand more imperfections, might haue beene buried with his bookes in the bottome of a drie-fatte, and there slept quietly amongst the shauings of the Press, if in his Epistle he had not beene so arrogantly censusoriall.

Not mee alone did hee reuile and dare to the combat, but glickt at Pap-hatchet once more, and miftermed all our other Poets and writers about London, piperly make-plaies and make-bates.

Hence Greene, beeing chiefe agent for the companie (for hee writ more than foure other, how well I will not say: but Sat citè, fi fat bene) tooke occasion to canuaze him a little in his Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches, and because by some probable collections hee geft the elder brothers hand was in it, he coupled them both in one yoake, and, to fulfill the prouerbe Tria sunt omnia, thruft in the third brother, who made a perfect parriall of Pamphleters.

About some seauen or eight lines it was which hath pluckt on an invectiue of fo many leaues. Had hee liu’d, Gabriel, and thou shouldst fo vnarteficially and odiously libeld against him as
thou haft done, he would haue made thee an example of ignominy to all ages that are to come, and driuen thee to eate thy owne booke butterd, as I fawe him make an Apparriter once in a Tauern eate his Citation, waxe and all, very handsomly feru'd twixt two dishes.

Out vppon thee for an arrant dog-killer, ftrike a man when he is dead?

So Hares may pull dead Lions by the beards.

Memorandum. I borrowed this sentence out of a Play. The Theater Poets hall, hath many more such prouerbes to perfecute thee with, because thou haft so scornefully derided their profession, and despitelye maligned honest sports.

Before I vnbowell the leane Carcafe of thy book any further, Ie drinke one cup of lambswool to the Lambe of God and his enemies.

In the first foure leaues of it, I haue fintel'd out these Godly and fruitfull obseruations.

Noble Lord, I doe it even upon former premiffes, not for any future confequents.

My booke is not worthy of fo honorable specialitie as your Patronage.

I will not prosecute it with Theological peculiars, but from the mouth of the fword I speake, &c.

The hearts of the wicked pant, their spirits faile them, they may well call for butter out of a Lordlie dish.
You that bee gentle Readers, doe you not laugh at this Lawiers englifh of former premisses and future consequents?

O finicalitie, your patronages speciallitie, but if he prosecute it with Theologicall peculiars, we must needs thrust him inter oues et bouses & reliqua pecora campi.

From the mouth of the sword I speake it, that butter out of a Lordly dish is but lewd diet for the Pulpit.

But this is not halfe the littour of incke-hornifme, that those foure pages haue pigd. I must tell you of the Octonarium of Ramus, the Sesquiamus of Phrigius, the Carthusianifme of Gulielmus Rikel, of Annals, Diaries, Chronologies, & Tropologicall schoolemen, the Abetilis of the Æthiopians or Pretoiommans, of Gulielmus minatensis, & S. Ierome allegorized, Abdias, Lyra, Gryson, Porta, Pantaleon.

All which hee reckons vp to make the world beleue he hath read much, but alleadgeth nothing out of them: Nor, I thinke, on my conscience, euer read or knew what they meane, but he hath stole them by the wholesale out of some Booksellers Catalogue, or a table of tractats.

Here are some of his profounde Annotations: Iacob tooke Leah, for his bedfellow in the darke by night, insteede of Rachell, whereby I learn to buy
my wife candle to goe to bed withall, and admit her not by darke, but by light.

Iacob was deceiued by Labans words: ergo, Obligations are better than bils, and we must believe no man, except he will waxe and multiplie in words, and call inke & parchment to witnes.

Iacob laide pilled rods with white strakes in the watering places of the sheepe, whereby I note that in carnal mixture the senses are opened.

Judge you that be Fathers of the Church, whether this be fit matter to edifie or no.

It was not for nothing brother Richard, that Greene told you you kift your Parishioners wiues with holy kifles, for you that wil talk of opening the senses by carnal mixture (the very act of lecherie) in a Theological Treatise, and in the Pulpit, I am afraide, in a priuater place you will practife as much as you speake: Homines raro, nisi male locuti, male faciunt. Olet hircum, olet hircum, anie modest eare would abhorre to heare it.

Farewell vncleane Vicar, and God make thee an honest man, for thou art too baudy for mee to deale withall.

It followes in the Text,

*To my verie good friend Maister Emanuell Demetrius.*

This letter of M. Bird to M. Demetrias, shound seeme, by all reference or collation of stiles, to
bee a Letter which M. Birds secretarie, Doctor Gabriel, indited for him in his owne praise, and got him to seethe his hand to when he had done. Or rather, it is no letter, but a certificate (such as Rogues haue) from the head man of the Parish where hee was borne, that Gabriell is an excellent generall Scholler, and his Father of good behauiour.

We will not beleue it except wee see the Towne seale seethe to it: but, say wee should beleue it, what doth it make for thee? Haue the Townesmen of Saffron Waldon euer heard thee preach, that they should commend thee for an excellent generall scholler? or (because thou profest thy self a Civilian) haft thou sollicited any of their causes in the bawdy Courtes therabouts? If not, go your wayes a dolt as you came: Master /Birdes Letter shall not reprieu you from the ladder.

But Veluet-breeches and Cloth-breeches (by the indigishment of the best man of none of the least towns in Essex) is a fantastical and fond Dialogue, and one of the most licentious intollerable invectives that euer hee read.

Why?

*In it is abused an auncient neighbour of his.*

How is he abused?

In stead of his name, hee is called by the craft hee gets his liuing with.
He hath borne office in Walden above twenty yere sine (hoc est, had the keeping of the Towne flocke, alias the stocks) Ergo he is no Rope-maker.

He hath maintaind foure Jonnes at Cambridge; Ergo Greene is a lewd fellow to say he gets his liuing backward.

Three of his Jonnes universally ridiculouslie reputed of (for inamoratos on their owne works) in both Vniuersities and the whole Realme. The fourth is shrunke in the wetting, or else the Print shoulde haue heard of him.

One of the three (whom the Quip entitles the Phyfition) returning sicke from Norwitch to Linne in Julie laft, was past writing any more Almanackes, before Greene ere imagined God had thought so well of him to take him to him.

Liuor post fata quiescat. Mother Liuers of Newington is a better fortune-teller than he was a Phifition.

A / Dash through the Dudgen Sonnet against Greene.

Put vp thy smiter O gentle Peter,
Author and halter make but ill meeter.

I scorne to answer thy mishapen rime:
Blocks haue cald schollers bayards ere this time.

I would trot a false gallop through the rest of
his ragged Verses, but that if I should retort his rime dogrell aright, I must make my verses (as he doth his) run hobling like a Brewers Cart vpon the stones, and observe no length in their feete; which were absurddum per absurdius, to infect my vaine with his imitation.

The Analafis of the whole is this: an olde mechanical meeter-munger would faine raile, if he had anie witte. If Greene were dogge-ficke and brain-ficke, sure he (poore secular Satirift) is dolt-ficke and brainleffe, that with the tooth-leffe gums of his Poetry fo betuggeth a dead man.

But I cannot be induced to beleue a graue man of his sort shou'd be fo raungily bent: when all comes to all, fhortest vowels and longest mutes will bewray it to bee a webbe of your owne loomes, M. Gabriel: you mute foorth many fuch phraffes in the course of your booke, which I will point at as I passe by.

I will not robbe you of your due commendation in anything: in this Sonnet you haue counterfeited the ffile of the olde Vice in the Morals, as right vp and downe as may be.

Let. Greene, the Connycatcher, of this dreame the author,
For his daintie devise deferveth the hauter.
Vice. / Hey nan anon sir, soft let me make water,
    Whip it to go, Ile kiss me maisters daughter.
    Tum diddy, tum da, falangte do diddle:
    Sol la me fa fol, conatus in fiddle.

I am afraide your Doctors fart will fall out to be
a fatall foyst to your breeches, if we followe you
at the hard heelles as we haue begun.
Thou shalt not breath a whit, trip and goe,
turne ouer a new leafe.

Maisier Bird, in the absence of M. Demetrius.
Perge porrò. I found his wife curteous: barlady
sir, but this is suspitious.
A woman is well holpen vp that does you any
curtesie in the absence of her husband, when you
cannot keepe it to your selfe, but you must blab it
in print.
If it were any other but Mistris Demetrius
(whome I haue heard to be a modest sober woman,
and indued with many vertues) I would play vpon
it a little more. In regard that shee is so, I for-
beare ; and craue pardon in that I haue spoken so
much.
Yet would I haue her vnderstand how well the
generall scholler her guest, hath rewarded hir for
his kind entertainment, by bringing her name in
question in print.
M. Bird and Demetrius, I knowe neither of
you by fight, but this Ile say, being of that welth you are, you had better haue spent a great deale of money, than come in the mouth of this base companion.

What reason haue I (seeing your names subcribed as his bolsterer, in a matter of defame that concerns mee) but to go through stitch with you, as well as him?

He thinks to ouer-beare vs as poore beggers with the / great ostentation of your rich acquaintance.

Lette all Noblemen take heede how they giue this Thrafo the leaft becke or countenance, for if they bestowe but halfe a glaunce on him, hele straight put it verie solemnly in print, and make it ten times more than it is.

Ile tell you a merry ieast.

The time was when this Timothie Tiptoes made a Latine Oration to her Majestie. Her Highnes as she is vnto all her subiects most gratious: so to schollers she is more louing and affable than any Prince vnder heauen. In which respeüt, of her owne vertue and not his desert, it pleased hir so to humble the height of hir iudgment, as to grace him a little whiles he was pronouncing, by these or such like tearmes. Tis a good pretie fellow, a lookes like an Italian, and after hee had concluded, to call him to kisse her royall hand. Herevppon he goes home to his studie, all intraunced, and
writes a whole volume of Verses; first, De vultu Itali, of the countenance of the Italian; and then De osculo manus, of his kisstng the Queenes hande. Which two Latin poems he publisht in a booke of his cald Ædes Valdinenses, proclaiming thereby (as it were to England Fraunce, Italie and Spaine) what fauour hee was in with her Maieftie.

I dismisst this Parenthesys, and come to his next businesse: which indeede is his first businesse: for tyll Greene awakete him out of his selfe admiring contemplation, hee had nothing to doe but walke vnder the Ewe tree at Trinitie hall, and say:

What may I call this tree, an Ewe tree, O bonny Ewe tree, Needes to thy boughs will bow this knee, and vaile my bonnetto.

Or / make verses of weathercocks on the top of steeples, as he did once of the weathercocke of Alhallowes in Cambridge:

O thou weathercocke that stands on the top of the church of Alhallowes,
Come thy waies down if thou darst for thy crowne, and take the wall on vs.

O Heathenish and Pagan Hexamiters, come thy waies down frō thy Doctourship, & learne thy Primer of Poetry ouer again, for certainly thy pen is in state of a Reprobate with all men of judg-ment and reckoning.

Come thy waies down from thy Doctourship,
said I? *Errau demens*, thou neuer wenst vp to it yet.

Fie on hypocrifie and Diffimulation, that men should make themselves better than they are!

Alas a Gods will, thou art but a plaine moth-eaten Maifter of Art, and neuer polluted thy selfe with any plaiftrie or dawbing of Doctourship.

Lift Pauls Churchyard (the peruser of euerie mans works, & Exchange of all Authors), you are a many of you honest fellows, and fauour men of wit.

So it is that a good Gowne and a well pruned paire of moustachios, hauing studied sixteene yeare to make thirteene ill english Hexameters, came to the University Court *regentium & non*, to sue for a commiſſion to carry two faces in a hoode: they not vſing to deny honour to any man that defuered it, bad him performe all the Schollerlike ceremonies and disputatiue right appertaining thereto, and he should bee inſtalled.

*Noli me tangere*: he likt none of that.

A stripling that hath an indifferent pretie stocke of reputation abroade in the worlde already, and some credit amongst his neighbours, as he thinketh, would be / loth to ieoperd all at one throwe at the dice.

If hee should haue disputed for his degree, descended in *arenam & puluerem Philosophicum*, and
haue been foild, Aih me quoth Wit in lamentable sort, what should haue become of him? hee might haue beene shot through ere hee were aware, with a Sillogisme.

No point, Ergo, it were wisely done of goodman Boores sone, if he should goe to the warres for honor, and returne with a wedden legge, when he may buy a Captaineship at home better cheape.

Pumps and Pantofles, because they were well blackt and glistered iolly fresly on it, being rubd ouer with inke, had their grace at length to be Doctour, Ea lege, that they should do their acts (that is, performe more than they were able).

Curst be the time that euer there were any obligations made with conditions, Vnde habeas quærit nemo, sed oportet habere, Howe Dorbell comes to bee Doctour none asks, but Doctour hee must bee to make him right worshipfull.

Acts are but idle wordes, and the Scripture faith, wee must giue account for euer idle word.

Pumps and Pantofles sweare they will iet away with a cleare conscience at the daie of judgement, and therfore do no Acts, giue no offence with idle words, onelie like a Hauke let flie at a Partridge, that turns the taile and betakes her to a walnut-tree, so to Oxford they trudge, hauing their grace ad disputandum, and there are confirmed in the fame degree they tooke at Cambridge: which is
as if a Prentife heere in London, as soone as hee is enrould, shoulde runne to some such Towne as Ipswich, and there craue to haue his Freedome confirm'd as of London: which, in truth is no Freedome, because hee hath not seru'd out his prentifhip.

Trust mee not for a dodkin, if there bee not all the Doctourship hee hath, yet will the insolent incke worme write himselfe Right worshipfull of the Lawes, and personate this man and that man, calling him my good friend Maiſter Doctour at euery word.

Doctour or no Doctour, Greene surfeited not of pickled hearing, but of exceeding feare of his Familiar Epiftiles.

Hee offered in his extremest want twentie shillings to the Printer to leave out the matter of the three brothers.

Haud facile credo, I am sure the Printer beeing of that honestie that I take him for, will not affirme it.

Marry this I must say, there was a learned Doctour of Phificke (to whom Greene in his sicknesse sent for counfaile) that hauing read ouer the booke of Veluetbreeches and Clothbreeches, and laughed merrilie at the three brothers legend, wild Green in any case either to mittigate it, or leave it out: Not for any extraordinarie account hee made

N. II.
of the fraternitie of fooles, but for one of them
was proceeded in the same facultie of phisicke
hee profeft, and willinglie hee would haue none
of that excellent calling ill spoken off.

This was the cause of the altring of it, the feare
of his Phisitions displeasure, and not anie feare else.

I keepe your conscious minde, with all other odde
ends of your halfe fac'd englith, till the full con-
clusion of my booke, where in an honorable Index
they shall be placed according to their degree and
segnioritie.

Wee / are to vexe you mightely for plucking
Elderton out of the ashes of his Ale, and not letting
him inioy his nappie muse of ballad making to
himselfe, but now, when he is as dead as dead
beere, you muft bee finding fault with the brewing
of his meeters.

Hough Thomas Delone, Phillip Stubs, Robert
Armin, &c., your father Elderton is abus'd. Re-
venge, revenge on course paper and want of
matter, that hath most facriligiously contaminated
the divine spirit & quintessence of a penny a quart.

Helter skelter, feare no colours, course him,
trounce him, one cup of perfect bonauenture licour
will inspire you with more wit and Schollership
than hee hath thrust into his whole packet of
Letters.

You that bee lookers on, perhaps imagine I
CONFUTED.

211

talke like a merry man, and not in good earneft, when I say that Eldertons ghost and Gabriel are at such odds: but then you knowe nothing, for there hath beene a monftrous emulation twixt Elderton and him time out of mind. Yea, they were riuals in riming foure yeare before the great frost. Hee expressely writ against him, 1580, In his short but sharpe and learned iudgement of Earth-quakes.

Broome boyes, and corncutters, (or whatfoeuer trade is more contemptible) come not in his way, stand fortie foote from the execution place of his furie, for else in the full tide of his standish, he will carry your occupations handsmooth out of towne before him, beseare them, drowne them: downe the riuere they goe Priuily to the Ile of Dogges with his Pamphlets.

O it is a peftilent libeller against beggers: hee meanes shortly to set foorth a booke cald his Paraphrafe vpon Paris Garden, wherein hee will so tamper / with the interpreter of the Puppits, and betoufe Harry of Tame and great Ned, that Titius shall not upbraid Caius with euerie thing and nothing nor Zoylus anie more flurt Homer, nor Therfitses fling at Agamennon.

Holla, holla, holla, flurt, fling, what reafty Rhetoricke haue we here? certes, certes, brother hoddy doddy, your penne is a coult by cockes body.
As touching the libertie of Orators and Poets, I will conferre with thee somewhat grauely, although thou beeft a goosie-cappe and haft no judgement.

A libertie they haue thou sayst, but no liberty without bounds, no licence without limitation.

Iesu what mistre wonders doft thou tell us? euery thing hath an end, and a pudding hath two. That libertie, Poets of late in their inuentories have exceeded: they haue borne their sword vp where it is not lawfull for a poynado that is but the page of prowesse, to intermeddle.

Thou bringft in Mother Hubbard for an instance. Go no further, but here confesse thy selfe a flat nodgcombe before all this congregation; for thou haft dealt by thy friend as homely as thou didft by thy father.

Who publikely accusde or of late brought Mother Hubbard into question, that thou shouldst by rehearsall rekindle against him the sparkes of displeasure that were quenched?

Forgot he the pure sanguine of his Fairy Queene, sayft thou?

A pure sanguine fot art thou, that in vaine-glory to haue Spencer known for thy friend, and that thou haft some interest in him, cenfereft him worse than his deadliesst enemie would do.

If / any man were vndeferuedly toucht in it,
thou hast reuied his disgrace that was so toucht in it, by renaming it, when it was worn out of al mens mouths and minds.

Befides, whereas before I thought it a made matter of some malitious moralizers against him, and no substance of slander in truth, now, when thou (that proclaimeft thy selfe the only familiar of his bosome, and therefore shouldst know his secretes) giues it out in print that he ouershotte himselfe therein; it cannot chuse but be suspected to be so indeed.

Immortall Spencer, no frailtie hath thy fame, but the imputation of this Idiots friendship: vpon an vnspotted Pegasus should thy gorgeous attired Fayrie Queene ride triumphant through all reports dominions, but that this mud-born bubble, this bile on the browe of the Vnnerfitie, this bladder of pride newe blowne, challengeth some interest in her prosperitie.

Of pitch who hath any use at all, shall be abused by it in the end.

High grasse that florisheth for a season on the house toppe, fadeth before the harvest calls for it, and maye well make a fayre shewe, but hath no sweetnesse in it. Such is this Asse in presenti, this grosse painted image of pride, who would faine counterfeite a good witte, but scornfull pittie, his best patron, knows it becomes him as ill, as an
Elephant to imitate a whelpe in his wantonnes.

I wote not how it falls out, but his invention is ouerweaponed; he hath some good words, but he cannot writhe them and tosseth them to and fro nimbly, or so bring them about, that he maye make one freight thrust at his enemies face.

Coldly and dully idem per idem, who cannot indite? but with life and spirit to limne deadnes it selfe, Hoc est oratoris proprium.

L. Inuesitues by fauour haue beene too bolde, and Satires by usurpation too presumptuous. What pleasure brings this to the reader? Iacke of the Falcon in Cambridge can say as much, and giue no reason for it.

But I can prompt you with a demonstration wherein Inuesitues haue been too bold. Do you remember what you writ in your Item for Earthquakes, of double fac'd Iani, changeable Camelions, Aspen leaves, painted Sheathes, and Sepulchers, Asses in Lions skinnen, dunghill cockes, Slipperie eales, dormiye, &c.? Besides your testimoniall of Doctour Perne, wherein it pleased you, of your singular liberalitie and bountie, to bestowe upon [him] this beautifull Encomium:—A buse and dizzie head, a brazen forehead, a leaden braine, a woodden witte, a copper face, a stonie breast, a factious and eluifh heart, a founder of nouelties, a confounder of his owne and
his friendeds good giftes, a morning booke-worme, an afternoon malt-worme, a right Jugler, as full of his sleightes, wiles, fetches, cafts of legerdemaine, toyes to mocke Apes withall, odde shifts and knauish practises, as his skinne can holde.

Notwithstanding all this, you defie, cut and long-taile, that can accuse you of any scandalous part either in word or deede.

Tully, Horace, Archilochus, Aristophanes, Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, goe for no payment with you: their declamatory stiles, brought to the grand test of your judgement, are found counterfeit, they are a venemous and viprous brood of railers, because they have broght in a new kind of a quicke fight, which your decrpite flow-mouing capacitie cannot fadge with.

Tush, tush, you take the graue peake vpon you too/much: who would think you could so easily shake off your olde friendes? Did not you in the fortie one Page, line 2, your Epistles to Collin Clout vse this speech?

Extra iocum, I like your Dreames passing well: and the rather because they fauor of that singular extraordinary vaine and inuention which I euuer fancied most, and in a manner admired onely in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil.

Dic fodes (godamercie on Dicke Sothis soule, for he was a better dauncer than thou art an enditer,
& with his legges he made some Musicke (there is none in thy letters) answere mee briefly, I say, to the point, haue I varied one vowell from thy originall text in this allegation? If not, I cannot see how the Doctours may well be reconcild, one while to commend a man because his writings favour of that singular extraordinarie vaine, which he onely admired in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pafquil: and then in another booke afterward, to come and call those singular extraordinarie admired men a venemous and viperous brood of railers.

The auncienter sort of Poets and Oratours shall plead their owne worthineffe.

Tullie neuer overreached himself in railing so much as in flatterie. His Phillippicks (sound Phyfick applide to a body that could not disgeft it) are the things that especially commended him to this art-thriuing age of ours, and had not these beene, hee would certainly haue beene sentenced by a generall verdit of histories for a timerous time-pleaser.

Who cannot draw a curtaine before a deformed picture? Plautus perfonated no Parafite, but he made him a flaeu or a bondman.

Fawning and croucting are the naturall gestures of feare, and if it bee a vertue for a vaffaile to liche a mans shooes with his tongue, sure it is
but borrowed from the dogges; and so is biting too, if it bee accompanied with ouer lowd barking, or in such wise as it cannot pinch but it muft breake the flesh and drawe bloud.

*Horace, Perfeus, Juvenall,* my poore judgment lendeth you plentiful allowance of applaufe: yet had you, with the *Phrigian* melodie, that stirreth men vp to battaile and furie, mixt the *Dorian* tune, that fauoreth mirth and pleafure, your vn-fugred pilles (howeuer excellently medicinable) would not haue beene so harfh in the swallowing. So likewise *Archilochus,* thou like the preachers to the Curtizans in Roome, that expound to them all Lawe and no Gospell, art all gall and no fpleeene. Hence came it to pafse, that with the meere efficacie of thy incensed *Lambicks,* thou mad’ft a man runne and hang himfelfe that had angered thee.

Thee I imbrace *Aristophanes,* not so much for thy Comœdie of the clowd, which thou wroft against philosophers, as for in al other thy inuen-tions thou interfust delight with reprehension.

*Lucian, Iulian, Aretine,* all three admirably blest in the abundant giftes of art and nature: yet Religion, which you fought to ruinate, hath ruinated your good names, and the opposeing of your eyes againft the bright sunne, hath caufd the worlde condemne your fight in all other
things. I protest, were you ought else but abominable Atheists, I would obstinately defende you, onely because Laureate Gabriell articles against you.

This I will justify against any Dromidote Ergonist whatsoever, there is no other vnlaudious use or end of poetry, but to infamize vice, and magnifie vertue, and that if they assemble all the examples of verse-founders from Homer to Hugh Copland, they shall not find anie of them but hath encountred with the generall abuses of the times.

Whatsoever harpeth not of one of these two strings of praisfe and reproofe, is as it were a Dirige in pricksong without anie dittie set to it, that haply may tickle the eare, but neuer edifies.

In the Romaine common-wealths it was lawful for Poets to reprooue that enormitie in the highest chairs of authoritie, which none else durst touch, alwaies the sacred Maiestie of their Augustus kept inuiolate: for that was a Plannet exalted above their Hexameter horizon, & it was capitall to them in the highest degree to dispute of his setting and rising, or search inquisitiously into his predominance and influence.

The secrets of God must not be searcht into. Kings are Gods on earth, their actions must not be founded by their subiects.

Seneca, Neres tutor, founde his death in no
verse but Oétaia. Imperious Lucan sprinkled but one drop of bloud on his imperiall chayre, and perisht by him also.

Ouid once saw Augustus in a place where he would not haue beene seene ; he was exilde presently to those countries no happy man hears of.

Long might hee, in a blinde Metamorphosis, haue playd vpon all the wenches in Roome, and registred their priuie scapes, vpbrayded inhospitalitie with the fable of Licaon: alluded to some Ambodexter Lawyer vnnder the ftorie of Battus: haue described a noted vnthrift, whose subftaunce hawkes and hounds haue deuoured, in the tale of Aëteon, that was eaten vp by his owne dogges: mockt Alcumiftes with Midas: picturede inamaratos vnnder Narcissus: and shrouded a picked effeminate Carpet Knight vnnder the fictionate perfon of Hermophroditus; with a thousand more such vnexileable ouer-thwart merrimentes, if luft had not led him beyond the prospect of his birth, or hee seene a meaner man finning than an Emperour.

Santia Maria ora pro nobis, how hath my pen loft it selfe in a croude of Poets.

Gaffer lobbernoule, once more well ouer-taken, how doft thou? how doft thou? holde vp thy heade, man, take no care: though Greene be dead, yet I may liue to doe thee good.
But by the meanes of his death thou art deprived of the remedie in lawe, which thou intendedst to have against him, for calling thy father Ropemaker. Mas, thats true: what action will it beare? Nihil pro nihilo, none in law: what it will doe vpon the stage I cannot tell; for there a man maye make action besides his part, when he hath nothing at all to say: and if there, it is but a clownish action that it will beare: for what can bee made of a Ropemaker more than a Clowne? Will Kempe, I mistrust it will fall to thy lot for a merriment, one of these dayes.

In short earmes, thus I demur vpon thy long Kentishtayld declaration against Greene.

Hec inherited more vertues than vices: a iolly long red peake, like the spire of a steeple, hee cherisht continually without cutting, whereat a man might hang a Jewell, it was so sharpe and pendant.

Why should art answer for the infirmities of maners? Hec had his faultes, and thou thy follyes.

Debt and deadly sinne, who is not subiect to? With / any notorious crime I neuer knew him tainted; (& yet tainting is no infamous surgerie for him that hath beene in so many hote skirnishes).

A good fellowe hee was, and would haue drunke
with thee for more angels than the Lord thou libeldst on gaue thee in Christ's Colledge; and in one yeare hee pist as much against the walls, as thou and thy two brothers spent in three.

In a night & a day would he haue yarkt vp a Pamphlet as well as in seaven yeare, and glad was that Printer that might bee so blest to pay him deare for the very dregs of his wit.

Hee made no account of winning credite by his workes, as thou doft, that doft no good workes, but thinkes to bee famosed by a strong faith of thine owne worthines: his onely care was to haue a splet in his purse to coniure vp a good cup of wine with at all times.

For the lowse circumstance of his pouerty before his death, and sending that miserable writte to his wife, it cannot be but thou byest, learned Gabriell.

I and one of my fellowes, Will Monox (Haft thou neuer heard of him and his great dagger?) were in company with him a month before he died, at that fatall banquet of Rhenish wine and pickled hearing (if thou wilt needs haue it so) and then the inuentorie of his apparrell came to more than three shillings (though thou faist the contrarie). I know a Broker, in a spruce leather ierkin with a great number of golde Rings on his fingers, and a bunch of keies at his girdle, shall
giue you thirty shillings for the doublet alone, if you can helpe him to it. Harke in your eare, hee had a very faire Cloake with fleues, of a graue goose turd greene: it would serue you as fine as may bee: No more words if you bee wise, play the good husband / and listen after it, you may buy it ten shillings better cheape than it cost him. By S. Siluer, it is good to bee circumspect in casting for the worlde, thers a great many ropes go to ten shillings. If you want a greasy paire of silke stockings also, to shew yourselfe in at the Court, they are to be had too amongst his moueables. *Frustra fit per plura quod fieri potest per pauciora*: It is policie to take a rich penniworth whiles it is offerd.

*Alas eu’n his fellow writer, that proper yoong man, almost scorns to cope with thee, thou art such a crow troden Asse: dost thou in some respects with him well and spare his name? in some respects so doth hee with thee as well? (hoc est, to be as well knowne for a foole as my Lord Welles) and promiseth by me to talke very sparingly of thy praise. For thy name, hee will not stworpe to plucke it out of the mire, and put it in his mouth.

By this blessed cuppe of sacke which I now holde in my hand, and drinke to the health of all Christen soules in, thou art a puissant Epitapher.

Yea? thy Mufes foot of the twelues; old long
Meg of Westminster? Then, I trowe thou wilt stride ouer Greene's graue and not stumble: If you doe, wee shall come to your taking vp.

Letter.
Here lies the man whom Mis'tris Ifam crownd with bays,
She she that ioyd to heare her nightingales sweete lays.

Comment.
Here Mis'tris Ifam; Gabriel floutes thy bays:
Scratch out his eyes that printeth thy dispraise.

She she she will scratch, and like a scritchinge night-owle come and make a dismal noife vnder thy chamber / windowe, for deriding her so dunstically. A bigge fat lufty wench it is, that hath an arme like an Amazon, and will bang thee abhominatly, if euer shee catch thee in her quarters. It is not your Poet Garisk, and your forehorfe of the parish that shall redeeme you from her fingers, but shee will make actuall proofe of you, according as you desire of God in the vnder following lines.

The next weeke, Maitster Bird (if his inke-pot haue a cleare current) hee will haue at you with a cap-cafe full of French occurrences, that is, shape you a meffe of newes out of the second course of his conceit, as his brother is said out of the fabulous
abundance of his braine to haue inuented the newes out of Calabria (John Doletas prophesie of flying dragons, comets, Earthquakes, and inundations).

I am sure it is not yet wore out of mens scorn, for every Miller made a comment of it, and not an oyster wife but mockt it.

When that fly-boat of Frenchery is once launcht, your trenchor attendant, Gamaliel Hobgoblin, intends to tickle vp a Treatise of the barly kurnell, which you set in your garden, out of which there sprung (as you auouched) twelue fuearll eares of corne at one time.

Redoubted Parma was neuer so matcht if hee kindle the match of his meeterdome, and let drive at him with a volley of verses. Let not his principalitie trust too much to it, because his name is Latin for a shield; for Poet Hobbinoll, hauing a gallant wit and a brazen penne, will honourably bethinke him, and euem ambitiously frame his stile to a noble emulation of Liuie, Homer and the diuinest spirites of all ages, as hee hath done to the emulation of Tullie heeretofore, when hee com/piled a Pamphlet called Ciceronis Consolatio ad Dolobellam, and publisht it as a newe part of Tullie, which had bin hidde in a Wall a thousand and odde yeares, and was found out by him before it euuer found beeing.
The circumstance was this; going downe the water at Cambridge one summer euening, and asking certaine questions of the Eccho at Barnewell wall (as the manner is passing by) holding her verie narrowly to the poyn, she reuealed vnto him what a treasure shee had hidden amongst her stones; namely, this new part of Gabrielis Ciceronis conso- latio ad Dolobellam: and though she was verie loath to disclose it, yet because she knewe not how soone God might call her; videlicet, how sodainely shee might fall; to discharge her con- science before her death, shee would deliuer it vp as freely vnto him as euer it was hers: come and digge for it, hee shoulde haue it. Neuer more glad was shee in her life, that since shee must needes surrender it to the light, she had chaunst vpon such a Cardinall Corrigidore of incongruitie, and Tullies nexte and immediate successour, vnder Carre, to whose carefull repolishing she might commit it.

Keepe it, quoth she?

No, if it were a booke of golde it is thine: reade it, new print it, dedicate it from thy gallery at Trinitie Hall to whom thou wilt.

Whether hee vlide a spade or a mattocke for the unburying of it I know not, but extant it is, and of a hundred I haue heard that it is his.

O Gabriell, if thou haft any manhood in thy starcht peake, looke vpon me and weepe not.
From this day forward shall a whole armie of boies come / wondering about thee, as thou goest in the street, and cry kulleloo, kulleloo, with whup hoo, there goes the Ape of Tully: thie he he, steale Tully, steale Tully, away with the Asfe in the Lions skinne.

Nay, but in sadnesse, is it not a sinfull thing for a Scholler & a Christian to turne Tully? a Turke would never doe it.

Be counsaileld in thy calamitie, write no more Consolatios ad Dolabelam, but Consolatio ad Doctore Gabrielem; thy selfe comfort thy selfe, and learn to make a vertue of contempt.

Ad ruentem parietem ne inclina, is a proverbe which would have prevented all this, if thou couldst have suffered thy selfe to have beene directed by it: for first and foremost, hadst not thou stept forth to under-prop the ruinous wall of thy brothers reputation, I had never medled with thee; if thou hadst not leaned too much to an olde wall, when thou pluckst Tullie out of a wall, the damnation of this Iest had bin yet vnbegotten.

He that hath borne faile in two tempests of shame, makes a sport of shippe-wracke of good name euer after.

The wall of the welfare of Fraunce that is started from her King, her true foundation, thy writinges, (more wretched than France) would
faine cleaue vnsto, if they could tell how, and count it a felicity to haue the oportunitie of so heroicall an argument.

God helpe Alexander, if hee haue no other Poet to emblazon his atchieuements but Cherillus.

High resolued Earle of Effex, and victorious Sir John Norris, Englands champions, enuied tranquillities confidence, vnworthy are your adventuures Iliades to bee reported by such a ragged reede as the iar/ring Pipe of this Batillus. The Portugals & Frenchmens feare will lend your Honors richer ornaments, than his low-flighted affection (fortunes summer follower) can frame them.

The seale that I haue set to your vertues be silence; the argument of prayse is vnauthorized in any mans mouth but olde age.

When the better parte of youthes feruence is boyld away, and that the showres of many sorrowes haue seafond our greene heads with experience, with the wither-fac'd weather-beaten Mariner, that talks quaking and shudderingly of a storme that hee hath newly toyld through, our wordes will bee written in our vifage.

Euen as the funne, so no sciente shines in his compleate glory till it be ready to decline.

These be the conclusions, that gray hairs prune & cut downe the prosperitie of yong yeares with as faft as it aspires, but let the seare Oake looke
himself in the glasse of truth, and he shal find that Methusalems blessing is imbecillitie, bestowed on any creature but the Foxe, who neuer is a right Foxe till he be ripe for the dunghill.

If my stile holde on this sober Mules pace but a sheete or two further, I shall haue a long beard lyke an Irish mantle, droppe out of my mouth before I be aware.

Marry God forfend, for at no hand can I endure to haue my cheeks muffled vp in furre like a Muscouian, or weare any of this Welch freeze on my face.

O it is a miserable thing to dreffe haire like towe twixt a mans teeth, when one cannot drinke but hee must thruf t a great spunge into the cup, &c so cleanse his coole porridge, as it were, through a strayner ere it / comes to his lippes.

This second Epistle I haue said prettily well too: I thinke we were best begin THIRDLy WHEREAS, for feare a volume steale vpon vs vnlookt for.
The Arraignment and Execution of the Third Letter.

To euerie Reader faavourably or indifferently affected.

Text, stand to the Barre. Peace there belowe.

Albeit for these twelue or thirteene yeares no man hath beene more loath, or more scrupulous than mylfe, &c.

The body of mee, hee begins like a proclamation: sufficeth it wee knowe you, your minde, though you say no more.

Is not this your drift? you would haue the worlde suppose you were vrgde to that which proceeded of your owne good nature: like some that will seeme to bee intreated to take a high place of preferment vppon them, which priuillie before they haue prayde and payde for, and put all their strength to clymbe vp to.

You would soift in non causam pro causa, haue it thought your flight from your olde companions obscuritie and silence, was onely, with Aeneas, to carry your Father on your backe, through the fire of flaunder, and by that shift, with a false plea of patience, vniustly driuen from his kingdome, filch a way the harts of the Queenes liege people.

The backe of those creple excuses I haue broke in / the beginning of my booke: if you haue anie new infringement to deftitute the inditement of forgerie that I bring against you, so it is.
Heere enters Argumentum a testimonio humano, like Tamberlaine drawne in a chariot by foure Kings.

1 THAT IN MY YOUTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE WITH THE EXCEEDING COMMENDATION OF THE GREATEST SCHOLLER IN THE WORLD, &C.

Ille ego qui quondam gracili modulatus auena.

Ah neighbourhood, neighbourhood, dead and buried art thou with Robinhood: a poore creature here is faine to commend himselfe, for want of friendes to speake for him.

Not the leaft, but the greateft Schollers in the world haue not only but exceedingly fedde him fat in his humor of Braggadochio Glorioso.

Yea Spencer him hath often Homer tearmd,
   And Mounfier Bodkin vowed as much as he;
   Yet cares not Nashe for him a halfepeny.

Lamentable, lamentable, that an indifferent vn-toward ciuill Lawyer, who hath read Plutarch de utilitate capienda ab inimicis, & can talke of Titius and Sempronius, should be no more set by, but set by, thruft aside, while his betters carry the bredth of the street before them.

Miferie will humble the haughtiest heart in the world: Habemus reum confitente: he confesseth himself a sinner in vnufficiency; yet for all that
the aduerfitie of vnienersall obloquy hath laide a heavie hande on him, still he retaineth (like concealed land) some part of his proud mind in a beggers purse, scorneth to say Fortune my foe, or ask a good word for Gods sake of anie man.

In the plainnesse of his puff vp nature, he will defie anie man that dare accuse him of that he is.

Why, why infractifisme PISTLEPRAGMOS, though you were yong in yeares, fresh in courage, greene in experience, and ouer-weaning in concept (we will refuse nothing that you giue vs) when you privately wrote the letters that afterward (by no other but your selfe) were publiquely divulged; yet when the bladder is burst that held you vp swimming in selfe loue, you must not be discontented though you sink.

I haue toucht the vlcer of your Oratourship, in requiting the nick-name of The Devils Oratour. An Vlcer you may well christen it, as an vlcer is a swelling, for it was a swelling of ambition, no modest petition of anie merit of yours that did craue it.

The olde Foxe Doctour Perne throughly discovered you for a yoong Soppe, or else halfe a word of our high Chauncelors commendation had stood with him inviolable as an Act of Parliament.

Great men, in writing to those they are acquainted with, haue priuie watch-wordes of
deny all, even in the highest degree of praising; they have many followers, whose dutiful service must not be disgraced with a bitter repulse in anie suite, though vnlawfull.

It may bee, some of these long defervers of his followers labourd him for thee: hee, like Argus, having eyes that pierce into all estates, saw thee when thou wert vnseene of thy selfe, and knowing thee to bee vnworthy of any place of worth, would not discountenance his men in so smal a matter, but writ for thee very vehemently outwardly, when the soule of his letter (into which thy shallowe braine could not descend) included thy utter mislike.

Yong bloud is hot, youth haßtie, ingenuitie open, abuse impatient, choller stomachous, temptations busie. In a word, the Gentleman was vext, and cutte his bridle for verie anger.

The tickling and stirring inuenßtie vaine, the puffing and swelling Satiricall spirit came vpon him, as it came vpon Coppinger and A[r]thington, when they mounted into the pease-cart in Cheape-side and preacht: needes hee must cast vp certaine crude humours of English Hexameter Verses that lay vpon his stomacke: a Noble-man stooode in his way, as he was vomiting, and from top to toe he all to berayd him with Tuscanisme.

The Mappe of Cambridge lay not farre off
when he was in the depth of his drudgery, some part of the excrements of his anger fell upon it; poor Doctour Perne's picture stood in a corner of that Mappe, and by the misdemeanor of his mouth it was cleanly defac'd.

Signior Immerito (so called because he was and is his friend undeservedly) was counterfeitly brought in to play a part in that his Enterlude of Epistles that was first at, thinking his very name (as the name of Ned Allen on the common stage) was able to make an ill matter good.

I durst on my credit undertake, Spencer was no way privy to the committing of them to the print. Committing I may well call it, for in my opinion G. H. should not have reaped so much discredit by being committed to Newgate, as by committing that misbelieving prose to the Press.

I have usually seen uncircumcised doltage have the porch of his Panim pilfries very hugely pestred with praises. Hay gee (Gentlemen) comes in with his Plowmans whistle in praise of Peter Scurse the penne-man, and Turlery Ginkes, in a light footed gigge, libels in commendation of little witte verie loftily; but for an Author to renounce his Christendome to write in his owne commendation, to refuse the name which his Godfathers and Godmothers gave him in his baptism, and call himselfe a well-willer to both the writers, when hee is the onely
FOURE LETTERS

writer himselfe; with what face do you thinke he can aunswer it at the day of judgement? *Eft in
tefacies sunt apti lusibus anni*: Gabriell, thou canst
play at faft and loose as well as any man in
England.

I will not lye and backbite thee as thou hast
done mee, but are not these thy wordes *to the
curteous Buyer*?

*Shew mee or* Immerito, *two English letters in*
print, in all pointes equall to these, both for the matter
it selfe, and also for the manner of handling, and say
wee never saw good English in our lives.

Againe, *I esteeme them for two of the rarest and*
finest treaties, as well for ingenuous devising, as
significant uttering, & cleanly conveying of his matter,
that ever I read in this tongue, & I hartily thank
God for bestowing upon vs such proper and able men
with their penne.

You must conceive, hee was his chamber-fellowe
welwillers cloke, when he spake this: the white-
liuerd slave was modest, and had not the hart to
say so much in his owne person, but he must put
on the vizard of an undiscreete friend.

It is not worth the rehearsal: *he scribled it in*
*iæst for exercise of his speech and stile, &c.*, and it
was the sinifter hap of those unfortunate letters to be
derided & scoffat throughout the whole realme.

*The sharpest part of them were read ouer at*
Counsell Table, and he referd ouer to the Fleet, to beare his old verfe-fellow noble M. Valanger company.

There was no remedie for it but melancholy patience.

A recantation he was glad to make by way of articles or positions, which hee moderates with a milder name of an apologie, & that recantation purchaft his libertie. Wherefore in grateful lieu of the benefit he receiu’d by it (although he hath hitherto vnworthily suppreft it) yet he means to take occasion by this extraordinary provocation to publish it, with not fo few as fortie such Academicall exercises, and sundrie other politike discourses.

And I deeme he will be as good as his word, for euer yet it hath beene his wont, if he writ but a letter to any friend of his, in the way of thanks for the potte of butter, gämon of bacon, or cheefe that he sent to him, straigt to giue coppies of it abroad in the world, and propound it to yong gentlemen he came in company with, as a more necessity & refined methode of familiar Epifles than the English tongue had hitherto been priuie to.

Lord that men shoulde bee so malitiously bent to frame a matter of some thing: he takes a pleasurable delight to behaue hims elf so that he may be laught at: how would you prate and insult, if you knewe as much by him, as he knows by himselfe.
Nashe, do thy worft, the three brothers bid a Fico for thee: difcommend thou them never so much, they will palpably praife, and fo consequently dispraife, [themselves] more in one booke they set foorth, than thou canft disparage them in tenne: yea, rather than faile, Maiſter Bird shall leaue copying out letters of newes, and meeter it mischieuously in maintenance of their scurrilitiſhip and rudite.

Three to one, par ma foy, is oddes: not one of them writes an Almanacke, but hee reckons vp all his brothers.

Bee it fpoken heere in priuate, Musfa Richardetti fratrizat fat bene pretty: the Muse of dappert Dickie doth fing as fweet as a cricket.

Nota manum & filum, Gabriel? it is thine owne verse in Ædes Valdinenses, all faue the inserting of pretty instead of certe, for rimes fake.

Had phifition John liu’d, or not dyde, a little afore Dog-dayes, a finode of Pifpots would haue concluded, that Pierce Pennileffe shou’d be conſouded without repriue.

The Spanyards kald their inuaſiue fleete agaynst England the Nauie inuincible, yet it was overcome. Lowe shrubbes haue outliu’d high Cedars: one true man is ftronger than two theues: Gabriell & Richard, I proclaime open warres with you: March on, Iocus, Ludus, Lepos, my valiaunt men
at armes, and forrage the frontiers of his *Fantasticallitie* as you haue begun.

*Tubalcan*, alias *Tuball*, first founder of *Farriers Hall*, heere is a great complaint made, that *otriusque Academie Robertus Greene* hath mockt thee, because hee faide, that thou wert the first inuenter of Musicke: so *Gabriell Howliglaffe* was the first inuenter of English Hexameter verses. *Quid respondes?* canst thou brooke it, yea or no? Is it any treason to thy well tuned hammers to say they begat so renowned a childe as Musicke? Neither thy hammers nor thou, I know, if they were put to their booke oaths, will euer say it.

The *Hexameter verse*, I graunt to be a Gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an english begger), yet this Clyme of ours hee cannot thriue in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in: hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running vpon quagmiers, vp the hill in one Syllable, and down the dale in another, retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins.

*Homer and Virgil, two valorous Authors*, yet were they neuer knighted: they wrote in Hexameter verses: *Ergo, Chaucer*, and *Spencer*, the *Homer* and *Virgil* of England, were farre ouerseene that they wrote not all their Poems in Hexameter verses also.
In many Countries velvet and Satten is a commoner weare than cloth among vs: Ergo, wee must leaue wearing of cloth, and goe euerie one in velvet and fatten, because other Countries vs e so.

The text will not beare it, good Gilgillis Hobber-dehoy.

*Our english tongue is nothing too good, but too bad to imitate the Greeke and Latine.*

Maister Stannyhurst (though otherwise learned) trod a foule lumbrong boyftrous wallowing meaure, in his translation of *Virgil*. He had neuer been praifd by Gabriel for his labour, if therein hee had not bin so famoufly absurd.

Greene for dispraifing his practife in that kinde, *is the Greene Maifter of the blacke Art, the founder of vglie oathes, the father of misbegotten Infortunatus, the scriuener of Crossèbiters, the Patriark of Shifters, &c. The Monarch of Crossèbiters* , the wretched fellowe Prince / of Beggars: *Emperour of Shifters*, hee had cald him before, but like a drunken man, that remembers not in the morning what he speakes ouer night, still he fetcheth Metaphors from conny-catchers, & doth nothing but torment vs with tautologies.

Why thou arrant butter whore, thou cotqueane & scrattop of scoldes, wilt thou neuer leaue afflicting a dead Carcasse, continually read the rethorick
lecture of Ramme Allie? a wispe, a wispe, rippe, rippe, you kitchin-stuffe wrangler!

Wert thou put in the Fleete for pamphleting? Bedlem were a meeter place for thee. Be not ashamed of your promotion: they did you honor that said you were Fleete-bound, for men of honor have failde in that Fleete.

Waft paper made thee betake thy felfe to Limbo Patrum: had it beene a booke that had beene vendible yet, the opproby had beene the leffe, but for Chandlers merchandize to be so massacred, for sheets that ferue for nothing but to wrappe the excrements of huswiuerie in, Proh Deum, what a spite is it. I haue seene your name cutte with a knife in a wall of the Fleete, I, when I went to visit a friend of mine there.

Let Maifter Butler of Cambridge, his testimoniall end this controverfie, who at that time that thy ioyes were in the Fleeting, and thou crying for the Lords fake out at an iron windowe, in a lane not farre from Ludgate hill, questiond some of his companions verie inquisitiuelie that were newlie come from London, what nouelties they brought home with them, amongst the rest, he broke into this Hexamiter interrogatorie very abruptlie,

But ah what newes doe you heare of that good Gabriel hufse fnuffe,

Knowne to the world for a foole, and clapt in the Fleete for a Rimer.
Ift true Gibraltar? haue I found you? It was not without foundation that you burst into that magnisical insultation,—I that in my yovth flatterd not my selfe, &c.,—for M. Butler, for a Phifition being none of the least Schollers, hath commended you exceedingly for a foonle & a Rimer. He that threatened to conjure vp Martins wit, hath written some thing too, in your praife, in Paphatchet: for all you accuse him to haue courtlie incenft the Earle of Oxford against you. Marke him well: hee is but a little fellow, but hee hath one of the best wits in England. Should he take thee in hand againe (as he flieth from fuch inferiour concertation), I prophecie that there woulde more gentle Readers die of a merrie mortality, ingendred by the eternall iefts he would maule thee with, than there haue done of this lat infection. I my self, that injoy but a mite of wit in comparifon of his talët, in pure affection to my natuie country, make my ftle carry a prefle faile, am fain to cut off half the streame of thy fport-breeding confusion, for feare it shoulde cause a generall hicket throughout England.

Greene, I can spare thy reuenge no more roome in this booke: thou haft Phifition Iohn with thee; cope thou with him, & let me alone with the Ciuilian & Deuine, whom, if I liue, I will fo vnceffantly haunt, that to auoid the hot chafe of my
fierie quill, they shalbe conftraind to ensconce them- selves in an olde Vrinall case that their brother left behind him. Yet ere I bid thee good night, receive some notes as touching his phificallity deceased. *He had his grace to be Doctor ere he died.* As time may worke all things. *In Norfolke where hee practised, he was reputed a proper toward man at a medicine for the toothake, & one of the skilfullest Phisitons, in caffing the heauens water, that euer came there.*

*How well beloved of the chiefeft Gentlemen (& Gentlewomen especially) in that shire, it is incredible to bee spoken. *Astra petit disertus:* hee is gone to heauen to write more Astrological discourses: his brothers liue to inherite his olde gownes, and remember his notable sayings, amongst the which was one: *Vale Galene, farewell, mine owne deare Gabriell: Valete humane artes,* heart and good will, but neuer a ragge of money.

*Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.*

Cloth-breeches house is burnt, and the flame goes a feasting to Pierce Penileffe house next.

Neuer til now, *Gregory Habberdine,* went thy foure letters vp Newgate, vp Holburne, vp Tiburne, to hanging.

Gentlemen, by that which hath been already laid open, I doe not doubt but you are vnwaueringly resolued, this indigested Chaos of Doctour-
ship, and greedy pothunter after applause, is an apparrant Publican and sinner, a selfe-loue surfeitted fot, a broken-winded galldbacke Iade, that hath borne vp his head in his time, but now is quite foundred & tired; a scholler in nothing but the scum of schollership, a stale foker at Tullies Offices, the droane of droanies, and maister drumble-bee of non proficientis. What hath he wrote but hath had a wofull end? When did he dispute but hee duld all his auditorie? his Poetry more spirtleffe than smal beere, his Oratory Arts bastard, not able to make a man rauishingly weeppe, that hath an Onion at his eye. In Latin, like a louse, he hath manie legges, many lockes fleece'd from Tullie, to carry away and cloath a little body of matter, but yet hee moues but flouly, is apparaild verie poorely.

In English, ice is not so cold, yet on the ice of ignorance/ will he slide. No wise man pittie him that periseth so wilfully.

Judge the world, judge the highest Courts of appeale from the miscarried worlds judgement (Cambridge and Oxford) wherein I haue tres-passed in Pierce Pennileffe, that hee shoulde talke of gnashing of teeth, yong Phaetons, yong Icari, yong Chorebi, yong Babingtons.

Neuer was I in earneft, til thus he twitted me with the comparison of a traitour.
Babington, high was thy birth, I a bondflaue of fortune in comparison of thee: thy fall greater than Phaetons, thy offence as heynous as Iudas. May neuer more such foule seeds of offence be sowne in so faire a shape, may they be marke always to mischiefe that meane as thou didst. The braunches of thy stocke remains ye vn-blasted with anie disobedience. God forbid that our forheades shoulde euer bee blotted with our forefathers misdemeanors. Die, ill deeds, with your vngratious ill doers: the liuing haue no portion with the dead: hell once paid his due, heauen gates are open to succeeding posteritie.

Prate of Pierce Penneleffe and his paltrie as long as thou wilt, I will play at put-pinne with thee for all that thou art woorth, but of thy betters gette thee a better discoursing penne before thou descantes of,

L. Greences inwardeft companion pinched with want, vexed with discreditt, tormented with other mens felicitie, and ouerwhelmed with his own miserie, in a rauing and frantike moode, most desperately exhibiteth a Supplication to the Deuill.

C. Heerein thou thinkest thou haft won the spurs from all writers, but God and Dame Fiction knows thou/art farre wide of thy ayme; for neither was I Greences companion any more than for a carowse or two, nor pincht with any vn-
gentleman-like want when I invented Pierce Penniless.

_Pauper non est cui rerum suppetit vsus:_ only the discontented meditation of learning, generally now a dayes little valued, and her professors set at naught & dishartened, caused mee to handle that plaintiffe subiect more seriously.

_Vext with discredít_ (Gabriel) I neuer was, as thou haft beene euer since _Familiaritas peperít contemptú_, thy familiar epistles brought thee into contempt.

Though I haue beene pincht with want (as who is not one time or another, _Pierce Penniless_) yet my muse neuer wept for want of maintenance as thine did in _Mubarum lachrima_, that was miserably flouted at in M. Winkfields Comœdie of _Pedanius_ in Trinitie Colledge.

How am I tormented with other mens felicitie, otherwise thà saying, I know a Cobler that was worth five hundred pound, an hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispend forty pound yearely by his land, a Carman that had whipt a thousand pound out of his horfe taile; if I had likewise reckond vp a ropemaker, that by tormenting of hempe, & going backward (which the Deuill would nere doe) had turnd as many Mill sixpences ouer the thumbe, as kept three of his sones at Cambridge a long time, & that which is more, three proud sones, that when they met the
hangman (their Fathers best chapman) would scarce put of their hats to him, why then thou shouldst have had some colour of quarell: thy accusatiō might iustly have enterd his title pro aris et focis, whereas now it is frivolous and forcelesse.

The sharpest wits, I perceive, haue none of the best memories: if they had, thou wouldst nere haue toucht mee with tormenting my felfe with other mens felicitie; for how didst thou torment thyfelfe with other mens felicitie when in the 28 page of thy first tome of Epiftles, thou exclamst, that in no age so little was so much made of, nothing adventuſt to be something, Numbers made of Ciphars, that is, by interpretatiō, all those that were adventuſt either in the Court or commonwealth at that time, had little to commend them, nothing in account worthy preferment, but were meere meacocks & Ciphars in comparison of thy excellent out-caft felfe that liu’dſt in Cambridge vnmounted.

Hang thee, hang thee, thou common coosener of curteous readers, thou grosse fhifter for fhitten tapſterly iefts, haue I imitated Tarltons play of the seaven deadly sinnes in my plot of Pierce Penileffe? whom haſt thou not imitated then in the course of thy booke? thou haſt borrowed aboue twenty phraſes and epithites from mee, which in sober fadneſse thou makſt vſe of as thy owne, when thou wouldſt exhort more effectuall.
Is it lawfull but for one preacher to preach of the ten commandements? hath none writ of the five senses but Aristotle? was sinne so utterly abolished with Tarlions play of the seuen deadly sins, that ther could be nothing said supra of that argument?

Canst thou exemplifie vnto mee (thou impotent moate-catching carper) one minnum of the particular deuice of his play that I purloind? There be manie men of one name that are nothing a kindred. Is there any further distribution of sins, not shadowed vnder these 7 large spreading branches of iniquity, on which a man may worke, and not tread on Tarletons heeles? If not, what blemish is it to Pierce Pennileffe to begin where the Stage doth ende, to build vertue a Church on that foundation that the Deuill built his Chappell?

Gabriell, if there be anie witte or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the uttermost: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it and answere it. Take truths part, and I wil prowe truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dug-voiding mouth.

Divinitie I except, which admits no dalliance: but in any other art or profeccion, of which I am not yet free, and thou shalt challenge me to trie maiftries in, Ile bind my selfe Prentisfe too, and stude throughly, though it neuer stand mee in
any other stead while I live, but to make one reply, only because I will have the last word of thee.

I would count it the greatest punishment that In speech could lay upon me, to be bound to study the Danish tongue, which is able to make any Englishman have the mumpes in his mouth, that shall but plunge through one full point of it, yet the Danish tongue, or any Turks, or hogs or dogs tongue whatsoever, would I learn rather than bee put downe by such a ribauldry Don Diego as thou art.

Heigh drawer, fill vs a fresh quart of new-found phrajes, since Gabriell saies we borrow all our eloquence from Tauerns: but let it be of the mighty Burdeaux grape, pure vino de monte, I coniure thee, by the fame token that the Deuils dauncing schoole in the bottome of a mans purse that is emptie, hath beeene a gray-beard Proverbe two hundred yeares before Tarlton was borne: Ergo, no gramercy, Dicke Tarlton. But the summe of summes is this, I drinke to you, M. Gabriell, on / that condition, that you shall not excruciate your braine to be conceited, and haue no wit.

Since we are here, on our prating bench in a close roome, and that there is none in company but you, my approoved good friends, foure Letters
FOURE LETTERS

and certain Sonnets, your Pages, I will rehearse unto you some part of the Methode of my demeanour in Pierce Pennileffe.

First, in so much as the principall scope of it is a most liuelie anatomic of sinne, the diuell is made speciall superuifor of it, to him it is dedicated: as if a man shoulde compile a curious examined discouerie of whoredome, and dedicate it to the quarter Maifters of Bridewell, because they are beft able to punifh it.

Wherfore as there is no fire without some smoke, no complaint without some precedent caufe of aggreeuance, I introduce a discontented Scholler vnder the perfon of Pierce Pennileffe, tragicallie exclaiming vpon his partial-eid fortune, that kept an Almes boxe of compasion in store for euery one but himfelfe. He tels how he toft his imagination like a dogge in a blanket, searcht euery corner of the house of Charitie, to see if he could light on any that would fet a new nappe of an old threedbare Cloake: but, like him that hauing a letter to deliuer to a Scottish Lorde, when hee came to his house to enquire for him, found no bodie at home but an ape that fate in the Porch and made mops and mows at him; so he, deliuering his vpnerufde papers in Powles Churchyard, the first that took them vp was the Ape Gabriel, who made mops and mows at them,
beflauering the outside of them a little, but could not enter into the contents, which was an ase beyonde his understanding.

With the first and second leafe hee plaies verie pretilie, and in ordinarie termes of extenuating, verdits Pierce Pennileffe for a Grammar Schoole wit; faies his Margine is as deeplie learnd as Faustes præcor gelida, that his Muye jobbeth and groth verie piteoußlie, bids him not cast himself headlong into the horrible gulph of desperation, comes ouer him that hee is a creature of wonderfull hope, as his own inspired courage diuinely suggeßteth, wils him to inchaunt some magnificent Mecenas, to honour himselfe in honouring him, with a hundred such grace-wanting Ironies, cutte out against the woll, that woulde ieopard the best joint of Poëtica Licentia to procure laughter, when there crinckled crabbed countenance (the verie resemblance of a sodden dogges face) hath sweorne it woulde neuer consent thereunto.

Not the most exquisite thing that is, but the Coußel Table Asse, Richard Clarke, may so Carterly deride.

Euerie milke-maide can gird with Ift true? How faie you lo? who would haue thought it? Good Beare, bite not? A man is a man, though hee hath but a hose on his head.

No such light payment, Gabriel, haft thou at my
hands: I tell thee where, when, and how thou shewedst thyselfe a Dunsfiuall.

Onely externall defects thou castst in my dish: nothing internall in thee, but I prooue that it is altogether excremental.

A fewe Elegiacall verses of mine thou pluckedst in pieces most ruthfullie, and quotes them against mee as advantageable, together with some dismembered Margine notes, but all is inke cast away, you recouer no costs and charges. With one minutes studie Ile dirstroie more, than thou art able to build in ten daies.

Squise/ thy hart into thy inkehorse, and it shall but congeal into clodderd garbage of confutation, thy soule hath no effects of a soule, thou canst not sprinkle it into a sentence, & make euerie line leape like a cup of neat wine new powred out, as an Orator must doe that lies aright in wait for mens affections.

Whome haft thou wonne to hate mee by light crawling ouer my Text like a Cankerworme?

Some superficial slime of poison haft thou driued from thy pen in thy shallow footed sliding through my Supplication, which one pen ful of repurified inke will excefiuelie wash out. Shall I informe thee (that vnfruitfullie endeavord to informe authoritie against me) why I infixed those Poeticall latine marget notes to some fewe pages in the beginning
of *Pierce Pennileffe*? I did it to explain to such expected speeches as thou art, that it was no uncouth abhorrence from the custom of former writers, for a man openly to bewail his undeserved despfenie.

In the uncasing of thy brother *Richard*, I calculated the Nativitie of the *Astrologicall Discourse*: I apparentlie suggested what a lewd piece of Prophecie it was: I register'd the infinite scorne that the whole Realme entertain'd it with, the Adages that ran vpon it, *Taritons* and *Eldertons nigrum theta* set to it, yet wilt thou, that art the sonne and heir to shamelesse impudence, the vnlineall vsurper of judgment from all his true owners, the *Hoyden* and pointing stock recreation of Trinitie hall, *Vanitas vanitatis & omnia vanitas*, inuest that in the highest throne of Art and Schollership, which a scrutinie of so manie millions of wel discerning condemnations hath concluded to be viler than newesmungrie, & that which is vilest of all, no leffe vile than thy Epiftles.

*Most voices, most voices, most voices; who is on my side who? Whether is the *Astrologicall Discourse* a better booke than *Pierce Pennileffe*? Gabriel hangtelow saies it is: I am the Defendant, and deny it, and yet I doe not ouercull my owne workes: His affercion he countermures him thus:*

*Pierce Pennileffe is a man better acquainted with*
the Diuels of hell than the Starres of Heauen: Ergo, the Astrologicall Discourse is better than the notorious diabolicall discourse of Pierce Pennileffe.

Once againe I denie his Argument to bee of lawfull age. Pierce Pennileffe is a better Star-munger than a Diuelmunger, which needeth no other for to corroberate it but this, that my yea, at all times, is as good as his nay.

How is the Supplication a diabolicall Discourse, otherwise than as it intreats of the diuerse natures and properties of Diuils and spirts? in that far fetcht senfe may the famous defensative against suppos'd Prophecies, and the Discouerie of Witchcraft be called notorious Diabolicall discourses, as well as the Supplication, for they also intreate of the illusions and fundrie operations of spirts: Likewise may I say that those his foure Letters nowe on their triall, are foure notorious lowfe Discourses, because they lyingly discourse little else faue Greenes lowse estate before his death.

M. Churchyard, our old quarrel is renued, when nothing else can bee faftned on mee: this Letter leapper vpbraideth mee with crying you mercie: I cannot tell, but I think you will haue a faying to him for it. Ther's no reason that such a one as he shoule presume to intermeddle in your matters, it cannot be done with any intent but to stirre mee vp to write against you afresh, / which nothing
vnder heau'n shall draw mee to doe. I love you vnfainedly, and admire your aged Muse, that may well be grand-mother to our grandeloquentest Poets at this present:

Sanctum & venerabile vetus omne Poema.

Shores wife is yong, though you be stept in yeares, in her shall you liue when you are dead. For that vnadvised indammagement I haue done you heretofore, Ile be your champion henceforward against any that dare write against you. Onely as euer you would light vpon a good cuppe of old facke when you are most drie, pocket not vp this flie abuse at a rakehell rampalions hands, one that, when an iniurie is deepe buried in the graue of obliuion, shall seeke to digge it vp againe, recall that into mens memories which was consumed and forgotten.

Whoreson Ninhammer, that wilt assault a man & haue no stronger weapons. The Italian faith, a man must not take knowledge of iniurie till he be able to reuenge it. Nay but, in plaine good fellowship, art thou so innocent & vnconceiuing that thou shouldst ere hope to dash mee quite out of request by telling mee of the Counter, and my hasteffe Penia?

I yeeld that I haue dealt vpon spare commodities of wine and capons in my daies, I haue
fung George Gascoignes Counter-tenor; what then? Wilt thou peremptorily define that it is a place where no honest man, or Gentleman of credit, euer came?

Heare what I say: a Gentleman is neuer throughly entred into credit till he hath beene there; & that Poet, or nouice, be hee what he will, ought to suspect his wit, and remaine halfe in doubt that it is not authentickall, till it hath beene seene and allowd invnthriffts / consiftory.

Grande doloris ingenium. Let foole dwell in no stronge houses than their Fathers built them, but I protest I shoulde neuer haue writ passion well, or beene a peece of a Poet, if I had not arriu'd in those quarters.

Trace the gallantest youthes and brauest reuellers about Towne in all the by-paths of their expence, & you shall vnfallibly finde, that once in their life time they haue visited that melancholy habitation.

Come, come: if you will goe to the sound truth of it, there is no place of the earth like it, to make a man wise.

Cambridge and Oxford may stande vnnder the elbowe of it.

I vow if I had a sonne, I would sooner send him to one of the Counters to learne lawe, than to the Innes of Court or Chauncery.

My hystevese Penia, thats a bugges word: I pry
thee what Morrall haft thou vnder it? I will depofe, if thou wilt, that till now I neuer heard of anie fuch English name.

There is a certaine thing cald christian veritie, & another hight common fenze, and a third cleapt humilitie: they are more requisite and neceffary for thee than modestie or discretion for mee and my companions, of which thou shouldft vnderstand, we are fo well prouided that we can lend thee and thy brother Richard a great deale, and yet keepe more than wee hall haue need of for ourfelves.

Wilt thou be fo hardy and iron-visaged to gain-fay that thy brother Vicars Batchlours hood was not turnd ouer his eares for abufing of Aristotle? I know thou haft more grace than fo, thou doft not contradift / it flatly, but flubbers it ouer faintly, and comes to recapitulate, not confute fome of the phrases I vfde in the vnhandsomg of his diuinifhip.

I my felfe, in the fame order of disgracing thou singles them foorth, will haue them vp againe, and fee if thou, or anie man, can absurdifie the worst of them.

I say, and will make it good that in the Astrologicall Discourse thy brother (as if hee had lately caft the heav'ns water, or beene at the anatomizing of the skies intrailles in Surgeons hall) prophesieth of fuch strange wonders to
ensue from the starres distemperaturs, and the
unusuall adulterie of plannetts, as none but hee
that is bawd to thosc celestiall bodies, could
euer descri.

This too I will ratifie for truthable & legible
English, that his Astronomy broke his day with
his creditors, and Saturne & Jupiter proud
honester men than all the world tooke them for.

That the whole Universitie his t at him,
Tarlton at the Theater made leaves of him, and
Elderton consumed his ale crammed nose to
nothing, in beare-baiting him with whole bundles
of Ballads.

All this he barely repeates without any disproue-
ment or denudation at all, as if it were so lame in
it selfe that it would adnihilate it selfe with the
onelie rehearfall of it.

For the gentilitie of the Nashes (though it might
seeme a humor borrowed from thee to bragge of
it) yet some of vs who neuer fought into it til
of late, can proue the extancy of our auncestors
before there was ever a ropemaker in England.
Wee can vaunt larger petigrees than patrimonies,
yet of such extrinsecall things, common to tenne
thousand calues and oxen, would I not willingly
vaunt, only it hath pleased M. Printer, both in
this booke and Pierce Penileffe, to intaile / a vaine
title to my name, which I care not for, without my consent or priuilege I here auouch.

But on the gentilitie of T. N. his beard, the maister Butler of Pembroke hall, still I will stand to the death; for it is the very prince Elector of peaks, a beard that I cannot bee perswaded but was the Emperour Dionisius his, surnamed the Tyrant, when hee playde the schoolemaister in Corinth.

Gabriell, thou haft a prety polwigge sparrowes tayle peake, yet maist thou not compare with his: thy Father, for all by thy owne confession hee makes haires, had neuer the art to twilt vp such a grim triangle of haire as that.

Be not offended, honest T. N., that I am thus bold with thee, for I affect thee for the names fake, as much as any one man can do another, and know thee to be a fine fellow, and fit to discharge a farre higher calling than that wherein thou liu'ft.

What more flute lurketh behind in this letter to be distributed into shop-duft?

Pierce Pennileffe is as childish and garish a booke as euer came in print: when he talks of the sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, he saies, it is monstrous and absurd, and not to bee suffered in a Christian congregatiø; that Richard hath cruind over the schoolmen, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of Divinitie brewelte, which the Dogs would not eate.
If he saide so (as hee did) and can proue it (as hee hath done) by Sainte Lubecke, then The Lambe of God is as childish and garish stuffe as euer came in print, indeede.

I, but how doth Pierce Pennileffe expiate the coinquination of these obiections?

Richard, whom (because hee is his brother, he therefore / censures more curious and rigorous, in calling him M. H. than hee would haue done other-wise) red the Philosophie Lecture in Cambridge with good liking and singular commendation, when A per se a was not so much as Idoneus auditor ciuils scientiae, Ergo, the Lambe of God beares a better Fleece than hee giues out it doth.

A per se a is improoued in nothing since, excepting his old Flores Poetarum and Tarletons surmounting rethorique, with a little euphuisme and Greeneffe inough.

Gabriel reports him to the fauourablest opinion of those that know A per se a his Prefaces, rimes, and the very timpanie of his Tarltonizing wit, his Supplication to the Diuel.

Quiet your selues a little, my Maistres, and you shal fee me dispearse all those cloudes well inough. That Richard red the Philosophie Lecture at Cambridge, I doe not withstand, but how?

Verie Lentenlie and scantlie, (farre bee it wee shuld flander him so much as his brother Richard
hath done, to saie he read it with good liking and singularitie). Credite mee, any that hath but a little refuse Colloquium Latine, to interseame a Lecture with, and can saie but Quapropter vos mei auditores, may reade with equialent commendation and liking.

I remember him woondrous well. In the chiefe pompe of that his false praise, I both heard him, and heard what was the vniuersfall slender valuation of him.

There was eloquent Maister Knox, (a man whose losse all good learning can never sufficiently deplore); twas he and one Maister Jones of Trinitie Colledge, that, in my time, with more speciall approbation conuerft in those Readings.

Since / I haue heard of two rare yong men, M. Meriton, and another, that in supplying that place of succeffion haue surmounted all former mediocritie, and wonne themselfues an everlafting good name in the Vniuersitie.

These thou shouldest haue memoriz'd, if any, but thou art giuen to speake well of none but thy selfe and thy two brothers.

Thrice fruitfull S. Iohns, how many hundred perfecpter Schollers than the three brothers haft thou nurft at thy paps, that yet haue not shakte off obscuritie?

Mellifluous Playfere, one of the chief props of
our aged & auntientest, & absolutesf Vniuersities present flourishing. Where doe thy supereminent gifts shine to themselfes, that the Court cannot bee acquainted with them?

Few such men speake out of Fames highest Pulpits, though out of her highest Pulpits speake the pureft of all speakers.

Let me adde one word, and let it not bee thought derogatorie to anie. I cannot bethinke mee of two in England in all things comparable to him for his time. Seldome haue I beheld fo pregnant a pleafaunt wit coupled with a memorie of fuch huge incomprehensible receipt, deepe reading and delight, better mixt than in his Sermons.

Sed quorsum hæc, how doe these digressions linke in without jubiëfum circa quod?

Flaunting Richard and his Philosopphie Lecture, was vnder our fingers euene now, howsoever wee haue loft him. Hold the candle, and you shall fee me caft a figure for him extempore: Oh hoh, I haue founde him without any further seeking. Giue me your eares: Io / Paxan, God faue them, they are long ones.

Now, betweene you and me declare, as if you were at shrift, whether you be not a superlatiue blocke for al you readd the Philosopphie Lecture at Cambridge: Brieflie, brieflie: let mee not stand all daie about you.
His conscience accuseth him, hee is stroke starke dumbe; onely by signes he craves to bee admitted in forma pauperis, that we should let him passe for a pore fellow, and he will sell his birthright in learning, with Esau, for a messe of porrige.

Curae leues loquuntur: he hath but a little cure to look too. Maiiores stupid, more liuing would make him studie more.

For this once wee dispence with you, because you looke so penitentlie on it, but let me not catch you selling any more such twife sodden sawdust diuinitie as the Lambe of God and his enemies, for if I do, Ile make a dearth of paper in Pater-nofter-rowe (such as was not this seaven yeare) onelie with writing against thee.

A per se a can doe it: tempt not his clemencie too much. A per se a?

Passion of God, howe came I by that name? My godfather Gabriel gauie it mee, and I muft not refuie it. Nor if you were priuie whence it came would you hold it worthie to be refuised; for before I had the reuersion of it hee beflow'd it on a Nobleman, whose new fashiond apparell and Tuscanish gestures, cringing side necke, eies glancing, fignomie smerking hauing described to the full, he concludes with this verse:

Euerie inch A per se a his termes and braueries in print.
Hold you your peace Nashe: that was before you were Idoneus auditor ciuilis scientiae. It may bee so, for thou wert a Libeller before I was borne. Yet vnder correction bee it spoken, I haue come to the schooles and purg'd rheume in my time, when your brother was Philosophie Lecturer; he wanted no supplosus pedû, to spend away his houre, that I could help him with.

What since I am improued you partly haue prooued to your cost; and may doe more at large, if God send vs more leysure.

As for Flores Poetarum, they are flowers that yet I neuer smelt too. Ile pawne my hand to a halfe-penny, I haue read more good Poets thorough than thou euer hardift of.

The floweres of your Foure Letters it may be I haue ouerlookt more narrowlie, and done my best deuoire to assemble them together into patheticall poifie, which I will here present to Maister Orator Edge for a Newyeares gift, leauing them to his wordie discretion to be censured, whether they be currant in inkehornisme or no.


Nor are these all, for euerie third line hath some of this ouer-rackt abfonisme. Nor do I altogether scum off all these as the newe ingendred some of the English, but allowe some of them for a neede to fill vp a verse; as Traynment, and one or two wordes more, which the libertie of prose might well haue spar'd. In a verse, when a worde of three fillables cannot thruft in but fidelings, to ioynt him euern, we are oftentimes faine to borrowe some lesser quarry of elocution from the Latine, alwaies retaining this for a principle, that a leake of indefinence, as a leake in a shiffpe, muft needly bee ftopt with what matter focuer.

Chaucers authoritie, I am certaine, shalbe all-leadgd against me for a many of these balducums.
Had Chaucer liu'd to this age, I am verily per-
swaded hee would have discarded the tone halfe
of the harfher fort of them.

They were the Ooufe which ouerflowing bar-
barifme, withdrawne to her Scottifh Northren
chanell, had left behind her. Art, like yong
graffe in the spring of Chaucers florishing, was
glad to peepe vp through any slime of corrup-
tion, to be beholding to thee car'd not whome
for apparaile, trauailing in those colde countries.
There is no reaflow that shee, a banifht Queene
into this barraine foile, hauing monarchizd it fo
long amongst the Greeks and Romanes, shoul-
d(although warres furie had humbled her to some
extremitie) still be constrained, when shee hath
recouerd her state, to weare the robes of aduerfitie,
iet it in her old rags, when she is wedded to new
prosperitie.

Vtere / moribus præteritis, faith Caius Caesar in
Aulus Gellius, loquere verbis præsentibus.

Thou art mine enemie, Gabriell, and, that which
is more, a contemptible vnder-foote enemie, or else
I would teach thy old Treuantship the true vse of
words, as alfo how more inclinable verse is than
prose, to dance after the horrizontant pipe of
inueterate antiquitie.

It is no matter, sincce thou haft brought godly
instruction out of loue with thee, vse thy own
destruction, raigne sole Emperour of inkehornifme:
I wish vnto thee all superabundant increase of the
singular gifts of absurditie, and vaine glory: from
this time forth for euer, euer, euer, euermore maist
thou be canonized as the Nonparreille of impious
epiftlers, the short shredder out of fandy sentences
without lime, as Quintillian tearmed Seneca all lime,
and no fande, all matter and no circumstance; the
factor for the Fairies and night Vrchins, in sup-
planting and setting aside the true children of
the English, and suborning inkehorne changlings
in their steads, the galemafrier of all stiles in one
standifh, as imitating euerie one, & havng no
seperate forme of writing of thy owne; and to
conclude, the onely feather-driuer of phraifes, and
putter of a good word to it when thou haft once
got it, that is betwixt this and the Alpes. So
bee it worlde without ende. Chroniclers heare my
praiers: good Maifter Stowe, be not vnmindfull
of him.

Thats well remembred, now I talke of Chronic-
clers: I founde the Astrologcall discouerfe the other
night in the Chronicle. Gabriell will outface vs, it
is a worke of such deepe arte & iudgement, when
it is expressly past vnder record for a coo封闭ng
prognostication. The wordes are these, though
somewhat abbreui/ated, for he makes a long
circumlocution of it.
In the yeare 1583, by meanes of an Astrologicaall
discourse upon the great and notable conjunction
of Saturne and Jupiter, the common sort of people
were almost dru'n out of their wits, and knew
not what to doe; but when no such thing hapned,
they fell to their former securitie, and condemned
the discouerler of extreme madnesse and sollie.

Iphissima sunt Aristotelis verba, they are the verie
words of John Tell-truth, in the 1357 folio of the

Mehercule quidem, if it be so taken vp, Pierce
Pennileffe may cast his cappe after it for euer
ouertaking it. But some thing eu'en now, Gabriell,
thou wert girding against my prefaces and rimes,
and the timpanie of my Tarltonizing wit.

Well, these be your words, præfaces and rimes:
let me studie a little, præfaces and rimes.
Apply to
Mas. Martin,

Minime verò, si ais nego. I neuer printed
rime in my life, but those verfes in the beginning
of Pierce Pennileffe, though you haue set foorth

The stories quaint of manie a doutie flie,
That read a lecture to the ventrous elfe.

And so forth as followeth in chambling rowe.

Præfaces two, or a paire of Epiftles, I will
receyue into the protection of my parentage: out
of both which, succe out one fœliçisme, or mishapen
English word, if thou canft for thy guts.
Wherein haue I borrowed from Greene or Tarlton, that I should thanke them for all I haue? Is my stile like Greenes, or my ieaflets like Tarltons?

Do I talke of any counterfeit birds, or hearbs, or ftones, or rake vp any new-found poetry from vnder the wals of Troy? If I do, trip mee with it; but I doe not, therefore Ile bee so faucy as trip you with the grand lie. Ware stumbling of whetstones in the darke there my maifters.

This I will proudly boaft (yet am I nothing a kindred to the three brothers) that the vaine which I haue (be it a median vaine, or a madde man) is of my own begetting, and cals no man father in England but my felfe, neyther Euphues, nor Tarlton, nor Greene.

Not Tarlton nor Greene but haue beene contented to let my simple iudgement ouerrule them in some matters of wit. Euphues I readd when I was a little ape in Cambridge, and I then thought it was Ipse ille: it may be excellent good stiill, for ought I know, for I lookt not on it this ten yeare: but to imitate it I abhorre, otherwize than it imitates Plutarch, Ouid and the choicest Latine Authors.

If you be aduifde, I tooke shortest vowels and longest mutes in the beginning of my booke, as suspicious of being accessearie to the making of a Sonnet wherto Maifter Christopher Birds name is
fet, there I faide that you mute forth many such phraifes in the course of your booke, which I would point at as I past by: Heere I am as good as my word, for I note that thou beeing afraide of beraying thy selfe with writing, *wouldst faine bee a mute*, when it is too late to repent. Againe, thou reuieft on vs and faist *that mutes are courfed and vowels haunted*. Thou art no mute, yet shalt thou be haunted and courfed to the full. I will neuer leaue thee as long as I am able to lift a pen.

Whether I seeke to bee counted a terrible bul-begger or no, Ile baite thee worse than a bull, so that thou shalt desire some body to thy knees to helpe thee with letters of commendation to *Bull*, the hangman, that he may dispatch thee out of the way before more affliction come vpon thee.

*All the inuehtive and satiricall spirits shall then bee thy familiars*, as the furies in hell are the familiars of finfull ghofts, to follow them and torment them without intermission: thou shalt bee double girt with girds, and scoft at, till those that stand by do nothing but cough with laughing.

Thou faiest I professe the art of railing: thou shalt not say so in vaine, for, if there bee any art or depth in it more than *Aretine* or *Agrippa* haue discouered or diu'd into, looke that I will found it and search it to the vuttermoft, but ere I haue done
with thee ile leaue thee the miserablest creature that the sunne euery sawe.

There is no kind of peaceable pleasure in poertrie, but I can drawe equally in the same yoke with the haughtieft of those foule-mouthd backbiters that say I can do nothing but raile.

I haue written in all sorts of humors privately, I am perswaded more than any yoong man of my age in England.

The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting: the remainder of the colde contents of this Epifle be these.

He enuiously indeuors, since he cannot reuenge himselfe, to incence men of high calling against me, and wold inforce it into their opinions, that whatsoeuer is spoke in Pierce Pennileffe concerning Peants, Clownes & hipercriticall hot-spurs, Midaffes, Buckram Giants, & the mightie Prince of Darknesse, is meant of them: let him proue it, or bring the man to my face to whome I euery made any vndutiefull exposition of it. I am to be my own interpreter in this firft cafe: I say, in Pierce Pennileffe I haue set downe nothing but that which I haue had my president for, in foraine writers, nor had I the leaft allusion to any man set aboue mee in degree, but onely glanc'ft at vice generallie.

The tale of the Beare and the Foxe, how euery it may set fooles heads a worke a farre off, yet I
had no concealed ende in it, but in the one to
describe the right nature of a bloudthirfty tyrant,
whose indefinite appetite all the pleasures in the
earth haue no power to bound in goodnes, but
he muft seeke a new felicitie in varietie of cruelty,
and destroying all other mens prosperitie; for the
other, to figure an hypocrite; let it be Martin, if
you will, or some old dog that bites forer than hee,
who secretlie goes and seduceth country Swaines.

Makes them beleue that honny which their bees
brought forth was poysonous and corrupt.

That they may buy honny cheaper than by being
at such charges in keeping bees.

That is not necessary they should haue such
statelie hives, or lie lucking at such precious
honnicombs.

If this (which is nothing else but to swim with
the streame) be to tell tales as shrewdly as mother
Hubbard, it should seeme mother Hubbard is no
great shrewe, howeuer thou, treading on her heeles
so oft, shee may bee tempted beyonde her ten
commandements.

A little before this, the foresaid fanaticall Phobetor,
geremumble, tirleriwhisco, or what you will, cald
forth the biggest gunshot of my thundering tearmes,
steeped in *Aqua fortis* and gunpowder, to come and
trie them felines on his paper Target.

But that it is no credite, *Galpogas*, to discharge
a Cannon against a lowse, thou shouldest not call in vain: thou shouldest heare Tom a Lincolne roare with a witness. Woe worth the daie & the yeare when thou hearest him. I fear blast thee nowe but with the wind of my weapon. With the waft of my words I lay waft all the feeble fortifications of thy wit. Shewe mee the Vniuersities hand and seale that thou art a Doctor sealed and deliuered in the presence of a whole Commentament, and Ile present thee with my whole artillerie store of eloquence.

A bots on thee for mee for a lumpish, leaden heeld letter dawber, my stile, with treading on thy clammie steps, is growne as heauie gated, as if I were bound to an Aldermans pace, with the irons at Newgate cald the widows Almes.

Ere I was chained to thee thus by the necke, I was as light as the Poet Accius, who was so Lowe and so slender, that hee was faine to put lead in his shooes for feare the winde shoulde blowe him into another Countrie.

Those that catch Leopards set cups of wine before them: those that will winne liking and grace of the readers muft set before them continually that which shall cheare them and requiuie them.

Gabriell, thou hast not done so, thou canst not doe so, therefore thy works neither haue, nor can any way hinder mee, nor benefit the Printer.
Euen in the packing vp of my booke, a hot ague hath mee by the backe. Maugre ficknesse worst, a leane arme put out of the bed shall grind and pash euery crum of thy booke into pin-dust.

The next piece of seruice thou dost against Pierce Pennileffe is naming of him wofull poueretto, and pleasant supposing thou puldet him by the ragged sleeue. Then matchest thou thy selfe to Vlijfes, and him to Irus: Irrita sunt hae omnia: it is a sleeuelesse ieast. I haue besliu’d thee already for it: it toucheth the body and not the minde. Befides, I was neuer altogether Peter Poueretto, utterly throwne downe, desperatly seperated from all means of releueing my selfe, since I knew how to separate a knaue from an honest man, or throw my cloake ouer my nofe, when I failed by the Counters.

The ragged cognizance on the sleeue, I may say to thee, carried meate in the mouth when time was: doe not dispraise it yet, for it hath many high partakers. Quae sequuntur hujusmodi sunt.

Thou turmoilst thy pia mater to proue base births better than the offpring of many discents, because thou art a mushrumpe sprung vp in one night, a feely mouse begotten on a moulehill, that wouldst payne pearch thy selfe on the mountaines, when thy legges are too short to overcome such a long iourney of glorie.
My margent note, *Meritis expendite causam*, thou wouldst rather than any thing wrest to an endit-ment of arrogance, & so branch mee into thy tiptoe stocke. I cannot see how thou canst com-passe it: For though I bad them weigh the cause by deserts, yet I did not assume too much to my owne deserts, when I expostulated, why Coblers, Hostlers and Carmen should be worth so much, and I, a scholler and a good fellow, a begger. How thou haft arrogated to thy selfe more than *Lucifer*, or any *Miles gloriosus* in the worlde would doe, I haue already noted at large in his due place and order. If thou bestowft any curtefie on mee, and I do not requite it, then call mee cut, and say I was brought vp at Hoggenorton, where pigges play on the Organs.

Wert thou well acquainted with me, thou shouldst per ceiue that I am very franke where I take, & send away none empty-handed that giue mee but halfe an ill worde.

It is a good signe of grace in thee, that thou confesseft thou haft offences enough of thy owne to aunswere, though thou beest not chargd with thy Fathers. Once in thy life thou speakest true yet. I beleue thee and pittie thee. God make thee a good man, for thou haft beene a wilde youth hitherto.

Thy Hexameter versés, or thy hue and crie
after a person as cleare as Christfall, I do not so deeply commend, for al Maißter Spencer long since imbrast it with an ouer-louing sonnet.

Why should friends dissemble one with another? they are very vgly and artlefle. You will neuer leaue your olde trickes of drawing M. Spencer into euerie pybald thing you do. If euer he praisfd thee, it was because he had pickt a fine vaine foole out of thee, and he would keepe thee stiill a foole, by flatttring thee, til such time as he had brought thee into that extreame loue with thy selfe, that thou shouldest run mad with the conceit, and so be scorned of all men.

Yet yet, Gabriell, are not we set non plus: thy roijer-doijerdome hath not daught vs out of countenance. If anie man ufe boistrous horffe play, or bee beholding to Carters Logique, it is thy selfe; for with none but clownifh and roynifeafts doft thou rush vpon vs, and keepst such a flurting and a flinging in euerie leafe, as if thou wert the onely reaftly iade in a country.

Skolding, thou sayest, is the language of shrewes, railing the stile of rakehels: what concludst thou from thence? Do I scold? Do I raile?

Scolding & railing is loud miscalling and reuiling one another without wit, speaking euery thing a man knows / by his neighbour, though it bee neuer so contrary to all humanitie and good manners, and
would make the standers by almost perbrake to heare it. Such is thy inue&tiue against Greene, where thou talkst of his lowfines, his surfeting, his beggerie and the mother of Infortunatus infirmities. If I scold, if I raile, I do but cum ratione insaniire: Tully, Ouid, all the olde Poets, Agrippa, Aretine, and the rest are all scolds and railers, and by thy conclusion flat shrewes and rakehels: for I do no more than their examples do warrant mee.

The intoxicate spirit of grisly Euridice, I can toffe ouer as lightly to thee, as thou haft puft it to mee. My hart is præoccupied with better spirits, which haue left her no house-roome: thou haft no spirite, as it shoule appeare by thy writing: intertaine her and the spirit of the buttery out of hand, or thou wilt be beaten hand-smooth out of Bucklarsbury.

When I parted with thy brother in Pierce Penni-leffe I left him to be tormented world without ende of our Poets and writers about London, for calling them piperly make-playes and make-bates, not doubting but they would drive him to this illue, that he should be constrained to goe to the chiefe beame of his benefice, and there beginning a lametale speech, with cur script, cur perii, ende with Prauum praua decent, iuuat inconcessa voluptas, & so with a trice, trufe up his life in the string of his sauce-bell. Now heere thou thankst God thou art not so vncharitably bent to put so much
wit in a speech: like a Parson in Lancashire, that kneeld down on his knees in a zealous passion, and very hartily thankt God he neuer knew what that vile Antichristian Romish Popish Latine meant. Did I exhort inke and paper to pray that they might not bee troubled with him any more? Inke and paper, if they bee true Protestants, will pray that they may not be contaminated any more with such abomination of desolation, as the three brothers Apocripha pamphleting.

After all this foule weather ensueth a calme dilatement of others too forward harmefulnes, and thy owne backward irefulnesse: thats dispacht; the court hath found it otherwise.

Then thou goest about to bribe mee to giue ouer this quarrell, and saist, if I will holde my peace, thou wilt bestowe more complements of rare amplification vpon mee, than euer thou bestowdft on Sir Philip Sidney, and gentle Maister Spencer.

Thou flatterst mee, and praiest mee.

To make mee a small seeming amenides for the injuries thou haft done mee, thou reckonst mee vp amongst the deare louers and professed sonnes of the Muses, Edmund Spencer, Abraham France, Thomas Watson, Samuell Daniell.

With a hundred blessings, and many praiers, thou intreatst mee to love thee.
CONFUTED.

Content thy selfe, I will not.

_Thou protestst it was not my person thou mistlikt_ (I am afraide thou wilt make mee thy Ingle) _but my fierce running at Parson Richard, excusest mee by my youth, & promisest to cancell thy impertinent Pamphlet._

It were good hanging thee now, thou art in such a good mind; yet for all this, a dogge will be a dogge, & returne to his vomit doe what a man can: thou must haue one squibbe more at the Deuils Orator, & his Dames Poet, or thy penne is not in cleane life. I will permit thee to say what thou wilt, _to vnderlie, (as thou desir'st) the verdit of Fame her selfe, so I may lie aboue thee._ Lie aboue thee, tell a greater lie than thou doft, no man is able.

_Thus O heauenly Mufe, I thanke thee, for thou haft giu'n me the patience to trauel through the tedious wildernesse of this Gomorian Epistle. Not Hercules, when he cleansed the stables of Ægeas, vnder-tooke such a stinking vnfauorie exploit. By thy assistaunce through a whole region of golden lanes haue I journeied, & now am safely arriu'd at not speedily dispatcht, but hafily bungled vp as you see._ Graunt that all such flow dispatchers & hastie bunglers, may haue a long time of reproach to repent them in, and not come abroad to corrupt the aire, & imposthumate mens ears with their pan-pudding profe any more. So bee it, say all
English people after mee, that haue eares to heare or eies to reade.

Feci, feci, feci, had I my health, now I had leyfure to be merry, for I haue almoft washt my hands of the Doctour.

His own regenerate verses of the jolly Fly, & Gibeline and Gewelph, some peraduenture may expe6t that I should anfwere. So I would if there were anie thing in them which I had not anfwerd before, but there is nothing; if there were, hauing driuen his fword to his head, I respect not what he can do with his dagger. Onely I will looke vpon the laft fonnet of M. Spencers to the right worshipfull Maifter G. H., Doctour of the lawes: or it may fo fall out that I will not looke vpon it too, because (Gabriell) though I vehemently fufpe& it to bee of thy owne doing, it is popt fouth vnder M. Spencers name, and his name is able to fanftifie any thing, though falfely ascrib’d to it.

The fourth letter of our Orators, to the fame fauourable or indifferent reader, was a letter which this many a long summers day, I dare ieopard my maydenhead /had line hidden in his deske; for it is a shipmans hofe, that will ferue any man as well as Green or mee.

To make fhort, in it, as fortie times before, he brides it and fimpers out a crie, No, forfooth, God dild you hee would not, that hee would: None fo
CONFUTED.

defirous of quiet as hee, good olde man, who with a pure intent of peace, first put fire to the flame that hath hedgde him in.

He hath preuented Maister Bunnie of the second part of his treatife of Pacification; for like some craftie ringleader of rebellion, when hee hath stirred vp a dangerous commotion, and findes, by the too late examination of his forevnexamined defects in himselfe, that so sweet a roote will hardlie effect correspondent fruits, strait, in pollicie to get his pardon, hee strikes faile to the tempeft of sedition, and is thrice as earnest in preaching pacification, obedience, and submission: so Gabriel, when he hath stir'd vp against me what tumults he can in stationers Shops, and left the quier of his enuie not an arrow vndrawne out, hee finds, by the audit of his ill consumed defects, that he is not of force inough to hold out: wherefore in pollicie, to avoid further arrearages of infamie, hee tires the text of reconciliation out of breath, and hopeth by the interceffion of a cuppe of white wine and fugar, to be made friends with his fellow writers.

It cannot choofe but he muft of necessitie be a very fore fellow, that is so familiar with white wine & fugar, for white wine, in a maner, is good for nothing but to wash fores in, and smudge vp withered beauty with. Well, for all hee would have Pierce make no warres on him, he makes
warres on Pierce Pennileffe, he beggeareth him again in this epistle verie bountifullie: hee faies that Lordes must take heede how they Lord it in his presence.

That the Asse is the onelie Author he alledgegeth.

That Greene is an Asse in print, and he a calfe in print.

That they are both chieftaines in licentiousnesse and that truth can faie the abominable villainies of such base shifting companions, good for nothing but to cast away themselues, spoile their adherents, &c.

For my beggerie, let that trauell the countries: I haue faide more for it than a richer man would haue done, but that I take vppon me to Lord it ouer great Lords, thou art a moft lewd tungd lurden to faie it.

Muſt they take heede how they Lord it in my presence, what muſt they doe in thy presence?

That sitting like a looker on
Of this worlds stage, doſt note with critique pen
The sharpe dislikes of each condition;
Ne fawnest for the fauour of the great,
Nor fearest foolish reprehension,
But freelie doſt of what thee lift intreate,
Like a great Lord of peereſffe libertie,
Lifting the good up to high honours feate,
And th' euill damaging euermore to die:
For life and death is in thy doomefull writing.
Whereas thou faist the Asse, in a manner, is the only Author I alleadge, I must know how you define an Asse before I can tell how to answere you; for Cornelius Agrippa maketh all the Philosophers, Oratours, and Poets that euer were, Asses: and if so, you vnderstand that I alleadge no Author but the Asse; for [if] all Authors are Asses, why I am for you; if otherwise, thou art worse than a Cumane Asse, to leape before thou lookft, and condemne a man without cause.

What Authors doft thou alleadge in thy booke? not two but any Grammer Scholler might haue alleadgd.

There is not three kernels of more than common learning in all thy Foure Letters. Common learning? not common senfe in some places.

Of force I must graunt that Greene came oftner in print than men of judgement allowed off, but neverthelesse he was a daintie slaue to content the taile of a Tearme, and eflufle Sersuing mens pockets.

An Asse, Gabriel, it is harde thou shouldst name him: for calling me Calfe, it breakes no square, but if I bee a calfe, it is in comparifon of such an Oxe as thy selse.

The chiestaines of licentiousnesse, and truth can say the abominable villanies of such base foisting companions, good for nothing, &c. I am of the mind wee shall not digest this neither.
Answere me succincte & expeditè, what one period any way leaning to licentiousnes, canst thou produce in Pierce Penniless? I talke of a great matter when I tell thee of a period, for I know two seuerall periods or full pointes, in this last epistle, at least fortie lines long a piece.

For the order of my life, it is as ciuil as a ciuil orenge: I lurke in no corners, but conuerse in a house of credit, as well gouerned as any Colledge, where there bee more rare quallified men, and seelceted good Schollers than in any Noblemans house that I knowe in England. If I had committed such abominable villanies, or were a base shifting companion, it floode not with my Lords honour to keepe me, but if thou haft faide it, & canst not proue it, what flandrous dishonor haft thou done him, to giue it out that he keepes the committers of /abominable villanies and base shifting companions, when they are farre honefter than thy selfe. If I were by thee, I would pluckle thee by the beard, and spit in thy face, but I would dare thee, and vrge thee beyonde all excuse, to discose and proue for thy heart bloud, what villanie or base shifting by mee thou canst. I defie all the worlde in that respect. Because thou vsted at Cambridge to shif for
thy Friday nights suppers, and cofen poore victuallers and pie-wiues of Doctours cheese and puddinges, thou thinkest me one of the same religion too.

What Greene was, let some other answere for him as much as I have done: I had no tuition ouer him: he might have writ another Galateo of manners, for his manners euerie time I came in his companie: I saw no such base shifting or abhominable villanie by him. Something there was which I have heard, not seene, that hee had not that regarde to his credite in which had beene requisite he should.

What a Calimunco am I to plead for him, as though I were as neere him as his owne skinne. A thousande there bee that have more reason to speake in his behalfe than I, who, since I first knew him about town, have beene two yeares together and not seene him.

But Ile doe as much for any man, especially for a dead man, that cannot speake for himselfe. Let vs heare how we are good for nothing but to cast awaie our selues, spoile our adherents, praine on our fauourers, dishonour our Patrons. Haue I euer tooke any likelie course of casting away my selfe?

Whom canst thou name that kept me company, and reapt any discomforte by mee? I can name
diuers good Gentlemen that haue beene my adherents and fauourers a long time. Let them report howe I haue spoilde them, or praid on them, or put them to one pennie detriment since I first con Floyd with thē.

Haue an eie to the maine-chaunce, for no sooner shall they understand what thou haft said by mee of them, but theyle goe neere to haue thee about the eares for this geare, one after another.

My Patrons, or anie that bind me to them by the leaft good turne, there is no man in England that is, or shall (for my small power) bee more thankefull vnto than I. Neuer was I vthankefull vnto any, no, not to those of whome for deedes I receiued nothing but vnperformed deede promising words. It is an honor to be accusde, and not conuinft.

One of these months I shall challenge martirdome to my selfe, and writ large stories of the persecution of tongues. Troth I am as like to persecute as be persecuted. Let him take vp his Crossē and bleffe himselfe that crostheth mee, for I will crosth shine with him though euerie sentence of his were a thousande tunnes of discourses, as Gabriel faith, euerie sentence of his is a discourse. Quods, quods giue me my Text pen againe, for I haue a little more Text to launce.

The secretaries of art and nature, if it were not
for friouloose contentions, might bestead the commo-
welth with manie puiffant engins. As, for example, 
Bacons brafen nofe, Architas wodden doue, dancing 
bals, fire breathing gourdes, artificiall flies to hang 
in the aire by themselfues, an eggshell that fhall run 
vp to the toppe of a speare.

Archimedes made a heau'n of braffe, but we haue 
nothing to do with olde braffe and iron.

Apollonius Regimontanus did manie pretie iugling 
tricks, but wee had rather drinke out of a glaffe 
than /a Jugge: vfe a little brittle wit of our owne, 
than borrow any miracle mettall of the Deuils.

Amongfl all other stratagems and puiffant engins, 
what say you to Mates Pumpe in Cheapside, to 
pumpe ouer mutton and porridge into Fraunce? 
this colde weather our fouldiors, I can tell you, 
haue need of it, and, poore field mife, they haue 
almoft got the colicke and ftone with eating of 
prouant.

Confider of it well, for it is better than all 
Bacons, Architas, Archimedes, Apollonius or Regio-
montanus deuices; for Gabriell, that proffefeth all 
these, with all their helpe cannot make the bias 
bowle at Saffron Walden run downe the hill, when 
it is throwne downe with the HARDEST hand that 
may bee, but it will turne vp the hill againe in 
spite of a mans teeth, and, that which is Worft, 
glue no reafon for it.
The Parrat and the Peacock haue leisur to repair and repolish their expired workes. You speake like a friend: wele listen to you when you haue repolished and expired your perfected degree. A Demy Doctor, what a shame is it?

Because your books do call for a little more drinke, and a fewe more clothes when they are gone to bed, that is, when they lie dead, you thinke ours do so too. No, no, we doe not vse to clappe a coat ouer a ierkin, or thrust any of the children of our braine into their mothers wombe againe, & beget them a new after they are once borne. If it bee a horne booke at his first conception, let it be a horne booke still, and turne not eat in the panne, conuert the Paternofter to a Primer, when it hath begd it selfe out at the elbowes vp and downe the cuntrey.

Thou didst thou knewst not what in eeking this thy short-wafted Pamphlet, iwis, as thou faist of thy selfe / Thou art an old trewant, fitter to plaie the dumbe dogge with some antients, than the hissing snake.

Who be those antient dumbe dogs? we shall haue you a Martiniift when all comes to all, because you cannot thrive with the Ciuill Law, and that you may marry her for any thing you are a kindred to her: therfore you will compare Whitegift and Cartwright, white and blacke together, name the
higheft gouernours of the Church without giuing them anie reuerence or titles of honour, imbrace anie religion which will be euen with the profeflion that fauors not you.

There is no baile or mainprife for it, but wee muft haue you in the first peeping forth of the spring, preaching out of a Pulpit in the woods: you haue put on wolues raiment already, seduced manie simple people vnder the habit of a sheepe and Wolfes print. If you protest & lie any more, it is not your ending here like a fermon, that will make you bee reputed for a faint.

Readers, a decaied student, lately shipwrackt with Si vales bene est, hauing foure Lightors of Letters, cleane cast away on the rocks called the Bishop & his Clarks, desires you all to pray for him, and he will recommend you all to God the next fermon he penneth, or his brother Richard.

He hath a mind to pay euery man his owne, though hee hath sustained great losse in fight, that which he cannot effect he befeecheth the Lord to accomplish, and euen to worke a miracle vpon the deafe.

Lord if it be thy will, let him be an Asse still. Gentlemen, I haue no more to say to the Doctor dispose of the victorie as you please: shortly I will present you with something that shal be better than nothing, onely giue mee a gentle hire for my
durtie day labor, and I am your bounden Orator for euer.

Son / netto.

Were there no warres, poore men should haue no peace:
Vnceffant warres with waspes and droanes I crie:
Hee that begins, oft knows not how to cease,
They haue begun, Ile follow till I die.
Ile heare no truce, wrong gets no graue in mee,
Abuse pell mell encounter with abuse:
Write hee againe, Ile write eternally.
Who feedes reuenge hath found an endlessse Muse.
If death ere made his blacke dart of a pen,
My penne his speciall Baily shal becum:
Somewhat Ile be reputed of mongst men,
By striking of this duns or dead or dum.
Awaite the world the Tragedy of wrath:
What next I paint shal tread no common path.

Aut nunquam tentes aut perfice.

Tho. Nashe.
Obseruations for the Readers of this Booke.

Item, whatsoever for the most part is here in this booke in change of letter, is our aduentaries owne Text, and unwaried words, either in this his convicted Four Letters, or some other fullie treatise, set forth by him heretofore.

Then, that I am wrecked and utterly divorced from my owne invention, & constrained still still, before I am warme in any one baine, to start away sodainely, and follow him in his vanitie.

Finally, Printers have many false stiches, which are thus to bee drawn vp.

In the second page of c for Baboune brother, reade Baboune his brother: in the 7 for allegorized & Abdias, reade allegorized Abdias: in the 8 for set hand, reade, set his hand: idem for headmen read headman. In the first of d for liuor post quiescat, reade Liuor post fata quiescat: in the 5 for plaister of Doctourship, reade plaistrie or dawbing of Doctourship: in the 7 for insolent incke-horne worme, reade insolent incke worme: in the 2 of e for Asse in present, read Asse in presenti: in the 3 for beftow vpon, reade bestow vpon him: in the 5 for effect, reade efficacie. In the 4 of f
for vertuous Syr John Norris, read victorious Syr John Norris: in the 5 page of h for I introduce in a discontented Scholler, read I introduce a discontented Scholler: in the 8 for His aflentrion, reade His assertion. In the 5 of I for verie company, reade verie timpanie. In the 5 page of κ for in this first case, reade first in this case. [Corrected in the places.—G.]

FINIS.